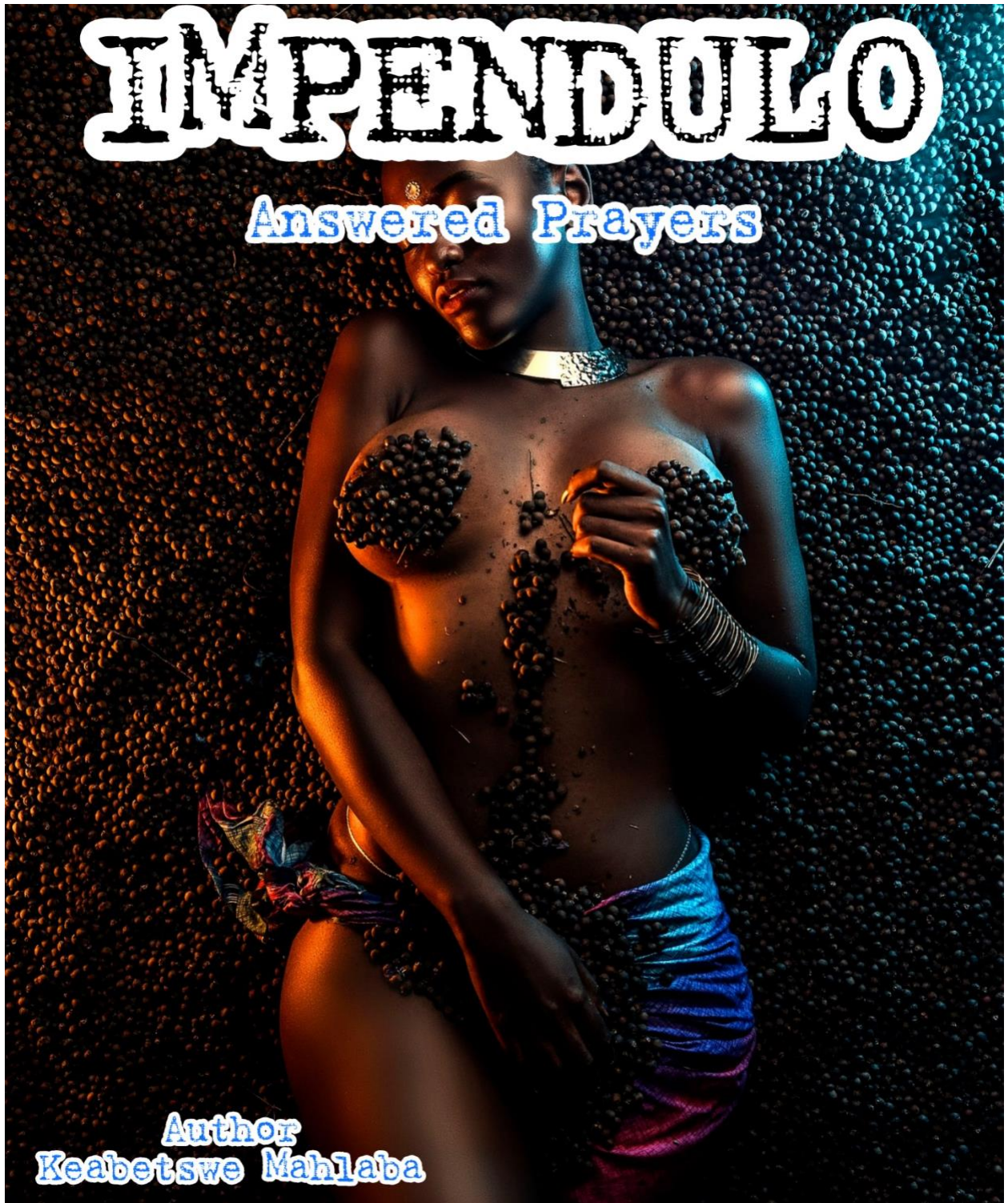


# IMPENIDULO

Answered Prayers

Author  
Keabetswe Mahlaba



\*PROLOGUE\*

\*Bianca\*

I need to get away , I don't even have a  
plan of how

But all I know is that I need to get away

My mother is going to kill me , my father  
is better way so much better

Even though I know he's going to be  
disappointed and all , but he will handle  
this better than my mother

The woman lives one perfect life , you'd  
swear she's the most perfect person  
who's ever lived and still lives

She might even disown me , okay maybe  
I'm exaggerating but yeah

And my father can't find out as well , he will tell her and I don't think she's ought to know right now

I walk in the living quarter , and as usual as always , they're together cuddling on the couch

You can't tell they've been married a whole 17 years , and still in love like this

Me : my king , my queen

They both look at me , my father smiles I return the smile

Me : may I please have a word ?

They sit up straight , my mother looks so cute with her little baby bump

I can't wait to be a sibling again , there's already three of us . Me being the first born , and then the twins

They're only 6 now , and quite a handful. But nonetheless we love them very much

Dad : please sit down

Me : thank you father

I sit down

Mom : why are you suddenly dressing like a boy , are you a lesbian Bianca?

I wish

Me : it's just baggy clothes mother , and boyfriend jeans . Girls do wear such

Mom : they do ?

Me : yes mother

Dad : girls of her generation amore  
(love)

They laugh , and now I feel like an idiot .  
Because this is not me

I'm actually a short and tight things kind  
of a girl , but now I have to hide I can't  
afford to even have them suspect me

Dad : we're sorry

They're not , because they're still  
laughing

Dad : what did you want to talk about ?

I clear my throat first

Mom : you're nervous what have you done ?

Me : nothing mother

Mom : I don't believe you

And I won't tell her the truth

Me : can I please visit nana?  
(grandmother)



Dad : is everything well ?

Me : yes , I just miss her that's all

Mom : what about school ?

Perks of being a royal child , we don't go to school like everyone else

Father just doesn't think there's good enough schools in Tuscan for his children

Already the twins have a primary school teacher , they've started their first year of school

And I'm in grade 11

Me : I'm home schooled mother , it won't be a problem at all . I'll still do my school work

She nods , seems like this will go much easier even than I expected

Dad : How long do you plan to be gone?

Forever

Me : maybe a month father

Mom : not happening , just three weeks  
and I expect you back here

Okay that's a bummer

Me : okay mother

My phone rings , and it's TJ . He's been  
calling me day and night , and I've been  
ignoring him for days now

I honestly feel so bad , but I need to fix  
this first . Going away from home , is  
what's best for the time being

I ignore the call again

Dad : when do you plan to leave ?

And it rings again

Mom : your phone Bianca , your father is talking

Me : I'm sorry mother

I put it on do not disturb

Dad : I asked a question

Me : oh father , maybe in two days time

Dad : that's too quick

Me : I know , but if you agree that I can go . I don't see why I should wait , when I can leave

The look they both give me , but I need to go see my grandmother . I won't even hold back

Dad : okay then

Me : thank you father, thank you mother

They both just smile

Me : I better go spend time with the twins , before I pack

I get up and leave them , and I've packed already

Me : now that wasn't so hard

I walk to my chamber , and check my phone . I have a message from TJ

It reads "you're pregnant I know , please answer my calls my girl"

I get some butterflies , when my  
boyfriend says I'm his girl nothing beats  
that

As soon as I get to my chamber , I call  
him and first ring he answers

TJ : you don't get to do me like this

Me : I'm sorry papi

TJ : you're my girl

I throw myself on the bed giggling , my  
cheeks even hurt from blushing

TJ : I love you

Me : I love you

TJ : then why are you treating your baby daddy like this ?

Me : how did you know ?

TJ : I know you remember

He sure does , but this is very suspicious

Me : I'm scared , I even asked to go visit nana (grandmother)



TJ : did they agree ?

Me : yes

TJ : when are you coming ?

Me : day after tomorrow

TJ : come this side , we need to talk and I miss you so bad

Me : I miss you as well , I'll make a plan to change flight plans without my parents knowing

TJ : that's my girl

I giggle

TJ : keep me posted , stop ghosting me

Me : It won't ever happen again

We talk a bit more , before hanging up .  
And I go find the twins

Three weeks without seeing them , will  
feel like three years

.

.

\*Princess\*

I really hate my brother right now , I know hate is such a strong word

But no one is ever considering me , nor my feelings and I can't take it anymore

I've had enough , I always have to hear what they're saying while they fail to hear what I'm saying

Ledi : can we all just calm down , and talk rationally about this

Me : you're the only one rational right now , please share some of that to your husband

He gives me a death stare

Tyler : I'm not your friend

Me : exactly you're my brother , and right now you should be supporting me but no

Tyler : what exactly do I have to support here Princess ?

Now I'm getting emotional , because I'm tired of this family and everything

Me : I sacrificed my youth for this family, and this kingdom . I left my life and everything I knew , my best friend . There's nothing I haven't done , everything that's been required of me I've always delivered . I lost the love of my life , because of this family and this kingdom . I sacrificed my happiness , for the sake of everyone . And now I have a chance to get my life back , that was

taken away from me . And you can't even support me ?

I'm now crying , and Ledi is comforting me . And the look she has , if I wasn't so sad and hurt I would be laughing

She looks like she wants to strangle Tyler right now

Tyler : so you're telling me , you want to marry a man that left you and married someone else ?

He did not

Me : he left because of what ? Wasn't it the family , and duties towards the Kingdom that kept us apart ?

Tyler : he still went and got married to someone else

Me : what was he supposed to do ?

Tyler : the only logical thing , wait

Now my hurt is turning into anger

Me : wait , you're saying he should have waited for 19 years ?

Tyler : yes

Me : okay this is not getting us  
anywhere, just know I will marry him  
with or without your blessings . And if it  
means I have to lose the Kingdom , then  
so be it

Tyler : now you're talking nonsense

Me : I'm not the only girl in this family ,  
Azania is old now

Tyler : it won't happen



I get up

Me : I don't know about that , all I know is that I will marry him

Ledi : you have really just proven to me that I married you for your looks , because the brains are not here

And what does he do ? He laughs . I leave them and go to my room

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

My parents couldn't be out of the  
country at a perfect time

As if they knew I needed them to be  
away right now

Having to explain myself why I wouldn't  
be home for a week , wasn't something I  
was looking forward to

I'm waiting anxiously at the airport with my cousin JJ , he's visiting us from KZN

Out of everyone in this family , I'm just more closer to him . He gets me and I get him

JJ : are you sure about this ?

Me : yeah , what do you mean ?

He chuckles

JJ : I don't think you know what you're doing

Me : well I do , so shut up

He laughs

JJ : if uncle hears about this , he's going to kill you

Me : and he's not going to , so worry not about me dying anytime soon

He shakes his head

JJ : so what's going to happen ?

Me : she's going to her grams in KZN , so she'll be here for a week or so

JJ : she loves you that much , to do all this ?

Me : it's called being in love my son , one day you'll get here . Once you meet the one

He laughs , I chuckle . I know he thinks I'm just being stupid right now

JJ : and right now ?

Me : we're going to stay at the hotel while she's here , and you're coming with as my cover

JJ : I hate you

Me : I know

I keep looking around , and checking my wrist watch

JJ : forbidden love , you wanna know what's gonna happen when the rents from both sides find out about this ?

Me : dude shut the fuck up , I'm dead I know

JJ : but here you are about to add some more shit .....

I spot her , and I leave this fool and rush to her . As she sees me , she puts her bags down and runs to me

Bia : papi

And you'd think she'll hug me first , but no she goes for them lips and kisses the lights out of me

And only hugs me after the kiss

Me : you're nasty as fuck , that's why  
you're pregnant right now

She pinches my arm , we laugh

Me : that hurt

Bia : serves you right

Me : fuck I missed you

I cup her face and keep pecking her lips



Bia : I'm so happy , being here with you .  
I've been going crazy out of my mind

Me : you're here now , and we'll figure  
this out together right ?

She nods , I take her bag she takes the  
small sports bag

Bia : you came with him ?

I laugh nodding , they hate and love each  
other . It's annoying and cute

JJ : Bianca the girl Bia

Bia : hi JJ

He takes the bag from her , we walk out heading to the parking

JJ : just go easy on the affection when I'm around , I'm sure half the airport is traumatized right now

Me : people mind their own business , you should learn that too

JJ : fuck , a week with you two I'm gonna go crazy

Me : and you have your own room

JJ : yes , and that's why you're about to be young parents

Bia : you told him ?

I nod , JJ is a fool . But he's always in my corner

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 01\*

\*Bianca\*



We arrive at the hotel , and I'm not surprised at all . I know TJ very well

He's one for fine taste , the lavish lifestyle . He's all about the soft life

Perks of being a royal child I always say , and he doesn't shy away from that

He's one person who doesn't shy away from being royalty , he lives like one

TJ : your food will be here in a minute

I sit down on the bed , and he takes off my shoes

Me : mmmm

He chuckles

TJ : stop that

Me : I can't help it , that feels so good

TJ : I'll give you a massage , as soon as you've had something to eat . And gotten some rest

Me : that will have to wait a bit

He looks at me

Me : I have to call Nana , she somehow has to know where I am . So she can cover up for me (grandmother)

He sighs and rubs his hand on his chin

TJ : you plan to tell her ?

Me : I have to , that's why I'm here

He paces a bit , and I know he's thinking.  
He tends to do that a lot when he has  
something on his mind

Me : stop pacing around before you  
drive me crazy

TJ : my parents are out of the country

Okay he did not tell me that

TJ : I have to find a way to tell them  
about this , before you go back to Italy .  
And you only have a week with me



Me : Nana can only cover so much for me (grandmother)

TJ : okay then call her , let's hear what she says

I take my phone out of my bag , and dial her . After a few rings she answers

Nana : baby

Me : someone is in a happy mood ?

Nana : your call tells me you're in the country

Me : did you talk to mom or dad ?

Nana : no , but I can see the code

Yes I have that one clever grandmother ,  
and it's just a pity . Because you can't  
even fool her

But she's the only grandparent I have ,  
because my father is an orphan . His  
mother passed away in his teens , and  
his father was killed

And my mother's father passed away  
when I was just a baby , so I don't know

him . Even that side of the baby , I don't know them much

Me : yes , but I'm in Cape Town . And I can only come to you in a week , mother doesn't know

I hold my breath

Nana : you want me to lie to your mother ?

Me : I just need 5 days and...

TJ : 7 days...

Me : shhhh....

Nana : when you're talking to me , focus on that

Me : sorry Nana (grandmother)

Nana : be here by Friday

Okay there goes 7 days

Me : Friday it is

Nana : take care of yourself there

Me : always , I love you

Nana : I love you right back

We hang up , and isn't she such a darling? My Nana is just one best old person in my life

TJ : 5 days really ? Actually make it 4

Me : stop exaggerating , and please understand I came here to solve this

He sits down on the bed , right next to me

TJ : this , is our baby . Can you at least regard that

I will not get into it with him , not now and not today I'm tired

Me : yes our baby

TJ : now that's better , I know we need to talk . But can it not be today ?

I just nod , he's getting agitated and I don't know why

TJ : I'll go check on your food

He kisses my cheek and walks out , I lay  
back down on my back facing up

Pregnant at 17 was not in my books , like  
my mother was in her early twenties  
when she got pregnant with me

And soon after got married to my father,  
that's what I always wanted

To make them proud first , but no I've  
gone and gotten them a whole human  
being . They'll never be proud of me  
after this , especially my mother

When she fell pregnant she had her life in order , she had the house the cars the money

And a whole company , even if my dad ran away . I wasn't going to be a burden to her or Nana (grandmother)

And what do I have ? A mere driver's licence , that I have because of my boyfriend

I have nothing on my name , if he ditches me . What the hell am I going to do ?



He's in South Africa , and I'm in Italy .  
This is just so messed up

I should have been safe I know , but I've  
never thought of using any protection  
methods

And TJ hates using a condom like he  
really hates it , but I always forced him

But always in the first round , he takes a  
few thrust and you get lost in pleasure  
next thing you know the condom is long  
gone . Being a teen mother , a whole  
Tuscan princess . This is such a shame

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*



I hardly slept , because Bia kept tossing and turning half the whole night . She's stressed I know my girl , we've been together for like 7 months only

But I know her like the back of my hand, and right now she's worrying me

She might even want to abort , the way she's so scared . I know this won't end well at all

That's why I have to try and do my level best to make sure , that I support her in these trying times

I wasn't rooting to be a father at 20 ,  
especially with a 17 year old . But it has  
happened and well I do want my child

My father is probably going to kill me  
after finding out

Being an only child , always gives me  
some sense of pressure . Like I always  
have to make sure I don't disappoint  
them

A child is a blessing , so it has been said .  
But the second you're young , and  
you're not yet independent

Have a child , and you'll get to understand that the "a child is blessing" phrase really isn't true

Everyone will be so fucking judgemental, like they've never made mistakes . I don't know much about Bia's family , but the way she fears her mother

You'd swear that the woman doesn't have any sin attached to her , and it's fucking frustrating to be honest

So imagine now , when she hears that her 17 year old princess is pregnant

She's going to want my head , they'll probably gang up with my dad . You know team up on me

What they don't know is that I love this girl , I love her so much

And as if she can hear my thoughts , she faces me and opens her eyes slightly

She smiles finding me looking or rather staring at me .

And she soon closes her eyes and goes back to sleep again , I smile to myself

It was just 7 months ago , I was bored boarding a flight from KZN coming back home

And for the first time in two years , I went on Facebook . And her face was the first thing I laid my eyes on

I didn't even greet , nor say anything . I just sent my numbers . And it was only I've sent them , that I decided to check her out

Two three pictures and I knew this one was mine , like she just had to be

And she didn't even bother seeing my message , I figured since we weren't friends it went to message request or spam

And if she's not the kind that checks those , then I'll wait forever . So I sent her a friend request

Hours later it was accepted , and she still didn't get back to me . I was seriously getting annoyed , days later I brought a flight ticket to Italy . And I took a picture of that and sent it to her , now that got her to acknowledge me



She called me within seconds of receiving that message

She went on how I'm scaring her , stalking her and all that nonsense

I figured she's a white kid she knows nothing , and so yeah a week later I was on my way to Italy

I stayed for a week , and she didn't come to meet me for three days. So I only saw her for two days , and that was it . The girl was mine , the boy had made things happen

And a month later she came this side , so I've been to Italy three times . And she's been here three times as well counting this time

So in 7 months we've visited each other , 6 times

Never thought I would find a girl on social media , and seriously be in love. But it has happened , and now there's a life of a human being coming

I just hope we can get through this , and her being so young really doesn't help us much

I know I will face some heat for this , and the interesting part . Is that our fathers are said to be sworn enemies

Now I don't know how true that is , but if it is . Then I'm truly going to die

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 02\*

\*Princess\*

I walk at the back , I can't believe at my age I still have to jump fences and hide when I have to see my boyfriend

Not only am I a grown ass woman , but I'm also a queen . This is really a sham

I spot him down by the hill , seeing him  
melts my heart . And it gives me hope  
that all will be well

I pick up my pace and walk faster , and  
as soon as he sees me he smiles

The smile warms my heart , the same  
way it did 19 years ago when we met

Me : hi

Sambulo : do I bow , what do I do ?

I laugh Jumping into his arms

Me : don't be silly , gosh I missed you so much

Sambulo : I've been around you know

Me : yeah I know

I pull out , and suddenly the mood has slowly changed

Sambulo : don't feel bad about it

I shake my head slightly , and lift my head I look up .

Blink once too many times , trying to  
fight the tears off

Sambulo : he's still against it ?

I nod

Sambulo : we'll find a way

Me : how ? He's not having none of it  
and I'm tired , maybe I should just step  
down the throne

Sambulo : whoa ! Not such drastic  
decisions . Remember we want your

family to approve of this , not for them  
to point fingers

He's right , but I've been trying . But  
every time it feels like I've hit a brick wall

Sambulo : we'll find a way , we will

Me : I lost you once , and I don't want to  
loose you again

He smiles and holds my hand

Sambulo : you won't , I promise you that



Once bitten twice shy

Sambulo : that was just a bad decision on my side , a hasty one . Thought it'll be better to just marry , than have to be busy with a lot of women . While I can't have the one woman I wanted , and look how that turned out

I still don't know how his marriage ended , and it's not something that happened a while back

It's been 4 months , and for those 4 months he's back into my life again

We were robbed , like massively robbed.  
I loved Sambulo so much . And I still do  
to this day

He was my first crush , my first lover and  
my first boyfriend

But our relationship only took a year ,  
and everything started going south

I was so forced to let go of him , and  
poor man tried to fight for us But it was  
just pointless , and quite for some time  
he tried that we work things out . But  
after 2 years he was done , and it was  
then I heard he was getting married

I thought it was a joke , I went to South Africa to see this myself

And indeed it was happening , I was hurt beyond words . That pain couldn't even be described

But I figured , what did I expect him to do ? Wait for me and not move on with his life for what ?

Back then I wasn't seeing any chance of ever getting back with him ever again . 5 years into the marriage , we met and one thing led to another . We cheated on his wife

I think that's when everything took a turn for them , things were not so nice anymore

And 3 year later they divorced , he came back then . But it was still a mess on my side

I couldn't take him back , so yeah he left and messed around . That there's even kids from that

And from two different girls , now that's something else right But then I can't fault him for things he did while not with me

And now that he's back again for the 4<sup>th</sup> time , I don't think I want to let him go

No matter how much my brother is not having this , it's my life and I'm not a child anymore

Me : I just wish mom was here

And just thinking about her , brings me to tears

Sambulo : mhm come here

He hugs me so tight , I cry against his chest . Life was never fair

Azania was just 7 when we lost her , it's been years now but then pain is still fresh

She was living with HIV , but that's not what took her life . It's still a mystery even to us today

She fell sick , so sick that there's no doctor we didn't take her to . Western and traditional , and no one could help her . No one could know what's wrong with her

We all tried , my uncle's with gifts . The aunts , even I tried . But it was pointless

Because within a week of her sickness , she passed on and that was it

Life has never been the same for us  
oManzini without our queen

Royalty was everything and more , and if she was still here . None of this would be happening

May she continue resting well

.

## \*Tuscan Kingdom\*

The queen has just helped the young prince's with their breakfast

But with their big sister not around ,  
their mood is not usually what it is . The  
king walks in , and he looks at them .  
Then they look at each other with the  
queen



Queen Mbali : don't give me that look

King Ciro : what's happening here ?

Queen Mbali : surely nothing to worry ourselves about , they'll soon forget she's not here . And go back to being their old selves

The king kisses both their cheeks , they just acknowledge his presence saying nothing back

King Ciro : okay

He comes and sits down on the table ,  
and soon after the queen follows him

Queen Mbali : you know she's long  
arrived and she hasn't called ?

King Ciro : and you know she's well , call  
your mother . I'm sure she's fine

She nods

Queen Mbali : but don't you find this  
sudden visit of her's suspicious ?

King Ciro : should I be ?

She sighs

Queen Mbali : no talks about South Africa , and then out of nowhere it comes . And she wants to leave immediately

King Ciro : you know your daughter

Queen Mbali : it's like she's running away from something

King Ciro : you don't think she's in trouble now do you ?

Queen Mbali : I just can't help but worry

King Ciro : well if there's anything she'll say

Leo : my king , I'm not feeling this food

The king looks at him bored , the queen smiles

King Ciro : it's food and you're not supposed to feel it , but eat it

Leo : I don't feel it

He looks at his father with puppy eyes ,  
his mother can't help but soften up

King Ciro : and it's not feeling you as well

Leo : can I stop eating ?

He asks a bit confused not  
understanding what his father just said

King Ciro : yes

Leo : thank you young king

The queen laughs , they always call him young king . Because he's the next one in line on the throne

And now he's just called his father with his own name , he slides down his chair and walks out

His brother remains and continues eating

King Ciro : and you feeling the food ?

He just look at him and says nothing

King Ciro : I guess you're feeling the food, okay let me go . And I'll see you my beautiful people , during lunch right

Queen Mbali : take us out

King Ciro : okay

He gets up pecks her lips , and leaves

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

JJ went out for some pool , right at the hotel . And I figured I can use this time to talk with my girl

We're taking a walk by the beach , the hotel is right by the south coast

Bia : it's a beautiful day , you should have really worn shorts

Me : and flip flops

She laughs , I shake my head smiling .  
She was on my case .Apparently going to the beach in skinny jeans is not a thing



She's in one long floral summer dress ,  
and flip flops . She even has on a hat ,  
looking flawless like some Hollywood  
housewife

Me : you're keeping the baby right ?

I doubt that's how people do it , just  
blurting it out like that . But this I need  
to know , we need to know where we  
stand with that

Bia : as scared as I am , I've never even  
thought of aborting . I don't think I have  
it in me

Me : thank you

I tighten my grip a bit on her hand

Bia : you want the baby ?

Me : very much so , yes I do

She smiles

Bia : I'm sure your parents will take this better than mine

Me : I don't know about that , my dad is not really .... Okay you know what ? I

don't think we should really be stressing ourselves about them right now

Bia : I plan to tell them as soon as I'm back home

Me : is that wise ?

Bia : I can't hide pregnancy , and as it is I was already wearing baggy clothes

She's exaggerating

Me : the bump is still far from showing

Bia : I don't think so , I feel like this baby is growing too fast

Me : wait , are you hearing yourself right now ? You sound like you're talking about things out of this world

Bia : what ?

I have no idea why I just said what I said, surely there's nothing wrong with what she said

Me : all I'm just saying is that the baby is normal , and so is growing normally

Bia : you're being strange

I know , I chuckle brushing it off

.

.

.

.

\*Batlokoa Kingdom\*

Dikeledi walks in their hut , and finds her husband busy on the laptop

As a brother , she gets where he's coming from . But she just wishes he can be open to all this

She sits down , he stops what he's doing and looks at her

Tyler : are you okay ?

Ledi : do you still remember Mbali ?

He frowns

Tyler : it's very stranger for you to ask me about other women , I've done all

the shit in this world but I've never  
cheated

She laughs , because she wonders if her  
husband even has eyes when it comes to  
other women

Me : Mbali Ferrari , that's who I'm  
talking about . Not your lovers

He laughs

Tyler : why would you ask me about that  
woman ?

Ledi : do you remember her now ?

Tyler : mention a Ferrari and I'll even remember them in my deep sleep

Ledi : your obsession with those people

Tyler : I merely dislike that one , she turned you against me

She smiles

Ledi : oh so you still remember how she came to see me , all the way from KZN just to fight for the man she loves ?



He knows exactly where this is going

Tyler : that was just a disappointment , a whole sister fighting for a Ferrari

She laughs

Ledi : you're the one with a problem with them , she loved that man . So your problem wasn't hers , do you see the pattern

Tyler : I don't understand why you're doing this

Ledi : Princess loves Sambulo , she has always loved him . It won't change now , and you know it . Is it a must that you stand in between two people who love each other like that ?

He sighs

Ledi : don't get me wrong Manzini , I'm sure you have your reasons . But what about hers , of wanting to marry the man she loves ? A woman in love is just as dangerous , and if you didn't learn anything from that Ferrari woman . Your sister is yet to show you more , and trust me . You don't want to have any of that ,

just let her be . It's her life , let it be her mistakes . All her life she's lived for this throne , and it's people . And now it's time , they return her back the same loyalty . And the same goes to you , that's your sister . And Sambulo is your friend...

Tyler : was , until he decided to be a dick

Ledi : and now you're just a dick like you say he is , in your sisters eyes

Tyler : couldn't she find someone else ?  
Did it have to be him , with two kids

from two different women . And he's a divorcee at that

Her husband is really being stubborn right now

Ledi : I'm tired being here , listening to you and your sister go back and forth with each other . I want to go back home

She gets up and walks to the bathroom , now Tyler knows he needs to fix this. Once something affects his wife , he can't stand that . Even if he's the cause of it

.

\*INSERT 03\*

\*Bianca\*

Two days only and Cape Town is just  
amazing , every time I'm here

It's like it's for the first time , and TJ always makes it a point that I enjoy myself to the fullest

He never disappoints on that , he just knows me too well . I'm just glad that we talked about the baby , and we agreed to keep the baby

I thought maybe he might be against it , and say I'm still young to be a mother and all that

The fact that he wants this baby , shows me that he will stand by me against the test of time

And we will need each other , especially with the distance between each other

TJ : you ready ?

Me : yes , please help me tie this

TJ : all done

Me : thank you

We're going out , to one of his mother's restaurants . I'm a fan of their red velvet cake

I don't know how they make it , what they use . But it's always on point

And he makes sure , that every time I'm around he takes me there

TJ : JJ will meet us there

Me : okay

We leave , and the ride is just chilled as ever . We arrive at the restaurant

And it has been renovated , since the last time I was here



We walk inside and the JJ that's supposed to meet us here , is already here

Me : really ?

He laughs

TJ : you know how he is

We sit down

Me : hi JJ

JJ : Bianca the girl Bia

I hate it when he calls me that , and he knows it . That's why he always does it , just to tick me off

TJ : anything to eat first ?

Me : just shrimps , they still have right ?

TJ : mmmm

This Mmmm thing of his bores the hell out of me

JJ : add a pack of beers to that , make it a platter

TJ : and juice for you

He places the order , and we just  
converse . Our order arrives and we eat

TJ : I've ordered your cake

Now that's music to my ears

Me : I need to use the bathroom

TJ : need me to accompany you ?

This one

Me : no I'll be fine

JJ : don't get lost

Me : get off my case

They laugh , I get up and walk to the  
restrooms

And I don't get lost , so yeah in their  
faces . I do business wash my hands and  
walk out

Approaching the table there's two girls ,  
and they look so comfortable

TJ : get lost

The guys are not even seeing me , I stand afar because I can hear them just fine

Girl 1 : so that's how you play ? In public I'm just a piece of dirt , you can just toss aside . But in bed , you ...

Me : what ?

The two stand up and look at me , and my boyfriend's face says it all

Me : really ?

Girl 1 : who the hell are you ?

I ignore her , and look at my boyfriend .  
Tears escape my eyes

Me : when I'm not around this is what  
you do ? Sleep around ? Ty really ?

TJ : wait....let's talk about this I...

Me : we're done

TJ : it didn't mean anything I....

I grab my bag and run out , it's not like I'm jumping to conclusions . He didn't deny it , and I wasn't accusing him of anything

All this while I thought , we were loyal to each other . Guess I thought a lot

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

Bloody hoes , fuck them once . And the dick is good , they catch feels

JJ : I think it's best we go

Melo : so you've been using me ?

Me : wh....

JJ : let's go , you don't want to cause a scene here . We're known the rents will find out about it , let's go

I feel like ripping someone's head off , JJ pulls me out



Me : she's leaving

JJ : you need to calm down

Me : don't tell me that , I don't even know where she is right now . She could be anywhere , she doesn't even know anyone around here

JJ : we'll go to the hotel surely she went back there

We get into the car , and I drive

JJ : I don't have 9 lives

I don't pay any attention to him , we arrive at the hotel . I run to our room and she's not in

I call her quite a few times and the phone is no voicemail

I start to panic now , I can't have anything go wrong with her . It'll all be my fault . Not forgetting that she's pregnant , Anything could have happened

JJ : let's drive around maybe we'll spot her somewhere

Me : wait...let me go check something

I go back to the room , and her clothes are gone . Beats me how she got here so fast , that we couldn't even catch up with her

JJ : can i come in ?

Me : yeah

I sit down on the bed , place my elbows on my thighs my hands on my head

Me : she's gone

JJ : what do you mean ?

Me : she left , she took her clothes

JJ : but....

Me : let's go to the airport

JJ : fine I'm driving , still value my life  
very much

We leave , and what a pointless drive it  
is . 10 minutes right after the flight to  
Durban has left we arrive

Me : we missed her by fucking 10  
minutes

JJ : don't blame my driving

I look and him and walk back to the car

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

It's late in the afternoon when I arrive ,  
and it's almost dark outside

I was just lucky to find an Uber , and it  
has dropped me right at the gate

I pay the driver and lucky for me , the  
gate is not locked

I walk in , and knock at the door . No one  
answers , I open and it's not locked

Me : Nana (grandmother)

I call her out , she comes right behind  
me

Me : why is the door not locked , and the  
gate as well ?

Nana : you're here early , and you have  
been crying

My eyes are itching , my nose is blocked.  
When I cry I'm a mess , and it can last for  
two days even

Me : we broke up

And I tear up again

Nana : you and that white boy of yours?

Me : he's not white , and he's no longer mine

Nana : come here and stop crying , I don't have money to take you to the doctor

She's exaggerating , we go sit down in the lounge

Nana : what happened ?



Me : he has been cheating

She knows about me and TJ , only she knows . Because when I come here , I always use her as a cover

To be able to go to Cape Town first , and then come here . So I was forced to tell her , and she was against it at the beginning

She eventually opened up , and said she'll let me continue seeing him.

Because if she tries to stop me , I might just go all rebellious

So it's best I become open and honest with her , that's why it's so easy to just talk to her

Nana : something is making you cry , and it's bigger than just him cheating

Me : can we talk tomorrow ?

Nana : go take a shower

I get up , I do need the shower . I really didn't want to be there with TJ while I'm angry at him

If this is what he does , how much more is he still going to cheat on me in the future ?

Worse now I'm pregnant , clearly I'll end up raising this child alone

And now he's seriously giving me thoughts , I open my phone and I have way too many calls from him

I don't even want to imagine how he is where he is right now . I send him a message that I'm fine , he should stop bothering me . He calls right back , and I answer

Me : I said I'm fine , stop calling me

I drop the call and switch my phone off ,  
I should call my parents soon

Now that I'm with Nana , I can call them.  
It won't be a problem when they ask to  
talk to her

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

Her voice was so strained , her nose blocked . And I knew it's because she had been crying

I felt so bad , like it hit me badly .  
Knowing that it's all my fault

Damn that Melo , she was nothing but just a fuck . She blew the whole fucking thing out of proportion

Besides Bia I've never loved any other girl , everyone I've been with it was never serious

I didn't sleep at all , all I know is that I need to fix this situation . Before my parents get back

JJ : you look like shit

Me : let's go get something stronger

He drives off , to some café . Near by the south coast . We walk inside and grab a table , he orders coffee and I get an espresso

JJ : you know she'll come back to her sense right ?

Me : she told me to stop bothering her

JJ : she's hurt , she's angry . And she's reacting , women are like that

Me : you know I had all this planned out

JJ : what are you talking about ?

Me : like the future , I had it all planned out . The plan was to find a way to make money right now , so that I can be able to save enough . And be able to support her , you know your aunt . She's big on responsibility

JJ : you know this small separation  
doesn't mean that has to be on hold  
right ?

Me : I was going to take my savings , buy  
maybe two taxis and....

JJ : whoa ! No

Me : what ?

JJ : that's dangerous grounds , okay it  
won't work . Use that money for  
something else



Me : it's not about safety , as long as it makes me money . So I can be able to take care of my family , I'm all for it

He shakes his head , he just doesn't get the pressure on me right now

And if I still want Bia to see how committed I am to her , I have to make this work

.

.

.

.

\*Ntsika\*

Hungry , young and eager . He couldn't have been the perfect candidate

I get up , and pay the bill . I walk out , taking just one look at him

And he's perfect , so fucking damn perfect . He even has the perfect look

Few minutes later they walk out of the café , and I follow behind them

As they get to the car , I hold his arm . And slide a card inside his hand

I walk past him like nothing happened ,  
the guy he's with didn't even see a thing

I walk to my car , make a phone call

Me : I found the guy , hold off on that  
one . Let's see how this one pans out ,  
but I have a hunch about it

Lwazi : alright

I drop the call , guess I'm stuck in Cape  
Town just for another day . He might not  
call as soon as I expect him to , he's not  
too desperate. He's just eager

\*Tyler Jnr\*

My mother called to say they're coming back , and they couldn't have chosen the worst time to come back

But I can't tell them not to , so JJ and I went back home . It wasn't a hassle , because we just had our bags and nothing else

We're home now , I don't know when the parents will be back exactly

I'm outside by the pool , holding the card from the guy . And I didn't even get to see his face very well

Question is who is he , and what does he want from me ?

I dial the number , and it rings twice he answers

Him : The Bishop

Wait what the hell ? I look at the number again and yes it's the same number

Him : are you gonna talk ? Or keep me waiting all afternoon

Fuck he's rude and fucking arrogant

Me : okay I think there's a misunderstanding here , I don't need no Bishop so I don't get why you gave me your card

He sighs

Him : it's you

Me : it's me ?

Him : I have a proposal for you , meet me tomorrow . Same Café 12:00 sharp , not earlier not later . Don't call me again, lose that number

He drops the call , and I'm like what the fuck was that ?

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 04\*

\*Batlokoa Kingdom\*

Dikeledi has done packing their bags ,  
she really wasn't kidding when she said  
she wants to go home



And her husband wasn't about to stop her , or try to convince her otherwise

The queen walks in , and her heart feels slight pains

Knowing that her best friend / sister in-law is leaving , she was her support system

Queen Princess : you're leaving ?

Dikeledi turns and looks at her , the two look so emotional that tears stream down their faces

Ledi : your brother is going to drive me insane , one more day here I won't be able to handle him

The queen smiles , and they both wipe their tears off

Queen Princess : at least I know I have a supporter in you

Ledi : always , you should know that . I'll be here whenever you need me

She nods , and walks in sitting on the couch Dikeledi joins her

Ledi : you love Sambulo , and you have always loved him . Tyler knows that , and right now he's just being an idiot . He's a man , and men are idiot's . But listen to me well , you've been through it all with me . Remember all of it ?

They both nod , shedding a few tears . Remembering everything they've been through , and how they've always been by each other sides through it all . They have one emotional moment

Ledi : when you need me , I won't be ditching you . If it means you have to go

against his wishes , then go right ahead .  
You have me

The queen hugs her

Queen Princess : thank you so much

Ledi : don't let him dictate your life like  
this , you're no longer that 18 / 19 year  
old girl . You're a woman now , and you  
can make your own decisions

Queen Princess : you're right , worry not.  
Soon I'll be sending you an invite to my  
wedding

The two laugh

Queen Princess : and you're the maid of  
honour

Ledi : by law

They end their goodbyes in good terms ,  
Ledi promising that soon she will be back

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I walk in the kitchen , and find JJ having breakfast . At this time of the day

It's almost 12:00 and I'm heading out to meet that Bishop guy . I wonder what he wants from me

Me : I'm heading out

JJ : I'm still eating

Me : I'm not going with you

He raises his brow

JJ : the hell why not ?

Me : you're not my tail

JJ : I hope you're not about to cause trouble with that girl , let me sort it out

Me : I won't kill her , you know that was a mistake

I grab my car keys

JJ : I'll never , bring that up . And I wasn't right now , just stay away from Melo let me handle it . I know you love Bia the

girl and you'll do anything to protect her.  
And that you'll harm whoever hurts her ,  
all I'm saying is right now . Just focus on  
getting her back

Me : I don't want to miss those crazy  
pregnancy moment with her

JJ : you know I'm talking sense

He laughs

Me : fine , I'm not even going to her

JJ : so I can't come ?



Me : no

I walk out and get into my car , I'm even low on fuel . I end up taking my father's car , and he's going to give me hell about it

On my way I call Bia , she's gone too far and has blocked me . I get on social media , and I'm blocked

Me : these species are insane

I still appreciate the common decency for her to let me know that she's okay

and safe . She was still considerate of my feelings , so I don't worry much about her

I arrive at the café , exactly one minute before 12 so I guess I listened well to instructions

- .
- .
- .
- .

**\*Ntsika\***

I watch him walk inside , and I get out of my car

I pass by his , and I realise who it belongs to . Confirms the resemblance

Me : Tyler Oceans

I chuckle to myself walking inside , I hope he won't be a problem . I'd hate to get into it with his father

I pull a chair and he wasn't expecting me

Me : keep still

He relaxes back , I sit down

TJ : just so you know , I don't need no Prayers . I'm no believer , so no prophecies either . I have no desire to have talks with a bishop

And it's like he did not just spit nonsense to me

Me : I said I have an offer for you

TJ : right ? Nothing spiritual

Me : the Bishop needs a distributor

TJ : are you not the bishop ?

Me : I talk you listen

TJ : hold it right there , you don't dictate to me . And do I look like I want to distribute

It's the attitude for me , fucking perfect

Me : you'll get paid weekly

I reach for my pockets and hand him a pen and piece of paper

Me : write your salary

He looks at me like in crazy

Me : I give you one opportunity to tell me how much money you want , you let it pass you . I'll fucking pay you however much I feel you deserve

TJ : I did not say I'm taking your offer , you think I'll walk into something blindfolded ?

Me : you'll be distributing products

TJ : I don't deal drugs

Me : black diamonds

He looks around , and leans over the table

TJ : that's illegal the hell you take me for?

Me : you have less then 1 minute to write your pay

He looks at the paper and back at me , he chuckles

TJ : ah

He writes down

Me : bare in mind it's your safety and it's your life , you don't even know me

I reach for the paper he holds it

TJ : who are you ?

Me : Ntsika Dlamini



He smiles , I take the paper from him .  
And this boy doesn't play , I look back at  
him

TJ : my life , my safety . I don't even  
know you remember ?

Cocky as fuck , I take my phone and  
make the payment . His phone beeps  
and he pops his eyes looking at it

TJ : you....

Me : the bishop will be in touch , you're  
available all day everyday . Your

personal issues , I don't even care to know about them . And for a 100 000 every 7 days , they shouldn't get in the way of my work

I get up

TJ : you're such a weirdo , you should have those personalities you have checked . I hear mental problems are very dangerous

Me : funny

TJ : I wasn't making a joke

Me : we're not friends

TJ : you're too old for that

Fuck this boy , the less I see of him the better . I walk out

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

I slept so peaceful , I even overslept . But  
it's not home

I'm not a princess here , I'm just a  
granddaughter . The smell of mac and  
cheese graces my nostrils

I head downstairs , and my stomach  
grumbles . I swear there's something  
strange with this baby

Even though TJ brushed it off , this  
doesn't feel normal . I've never been  
pregnant but I doubt it feels this way

Me : good morning

She laughs

Nana : you mean day

Me : what ?

I sit down

Nana : it's after midday right now

Me : wow

Nana : food will be ready in a minute ,  
you missed breakfast

Me : I slept way too good

Nana : don't make it a habit , you can't  
be missing breakfast

Me : okay

I so badly want to unblock him , and see  
if he's called or texted

I'm stupid right ? Because I'm the one  
who blocked him

Nana : what is it ?

I look at her , she must have seen I got  
lost in thought

Nana : this breakup is serious ?

Me : I think so

She smiles

Nana : I guess not

Me : but I just said ....

Nana : you're not sure , and that means you still love that white boy . And you will get back to him

Me : he cheated

Nana : men cheat

Me : it's no excuse and I'm not about that , he has my loyalty why can't I have the same with him ?

Nana : men cheat for sex ...

Me : Nana....! (Grandmother)



Nana : women cheat for a whole lot of things , when a man cheats for those things . The woman is the problem , men cheat just for sex . And it's not because they're not getting it , they're just too greedy

Me : well how greedy is he ? We live oceans apart

I sigh

Me : I'm pregnant

She looks down , and I tear up . I'm the most crying person I know

Me : I'm so scared , I don't even know how to tell my parents . I thought I had TJ , and that he would support me . But now I don't know anymore , I disappointed my parents and for what . Maybe I should just....

Nana : you will not make the same mistakes your mother did

She raises her voice and she's also crying

Me : I'm sorry Nana (grandmother)

Now I see what I've done , if she's this hurt . Then how much more will my parents be ?

I get up , but she's quick to get to hold me

Nana : you're my baby , if I throw you out where am I saying you should go ?

She takes my hand and we walk to the lounge , she sits down and places my head on her lap

Nana : oh we'll figure this all out , does he know ?

Me : yeah

Nana : he will come around

My squabble with TJ , is not on top of my worries list right now

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*INSERT 05\*

\*Sambulo\*

He walks in , and I don't know what to expect from him today

As of late he's just throwing every stone he can my way , I've always known he was against us

But not this much , I have a sister as well though . I do get where his disapproval comes from

He sits down , and calls waiter . He orders a glass of scotch

Me : hi

He chuckles

Tyler : let's cut to the chase

Me : there's even a chase ?

Tyler : why are you still hung up on her ?  
It's been years , why don't you just let it  
go ?

Me : because I love her

Tyler : you went and got married , that  
shit didn't work out for you . And you  
come back with two freaking kids , you  
want to dump all that to her ?

Me : you make it sound as if it was my  
choice to leave her

Tyler : don't give me that crap Sambulo

Me : it's pointless trying to make you see reason , she tried and I've tried . It's clear you'll never approve and your word goes in this family , I've lost you as a friend you've made that clear the second I came closer to your sister . Tell me what to do , to prove to you how much I love her . That I'm not back because , my marriage failed . And I have two kids , I just want to dump on her . I've always loved Princess , and I will always love her . Just tell me what to do and I will do it

He downs his glass



Tyler : she's still a Manzini princess ,  
before she's a Batlokoa queen . I'll be  
expecting that letter

He gets up , and pats my shoulder as he  
walks away

He's about to go all crazy on me , and he  
wants things done the Zulu route way

And it's a shame to say this , because I  
only trust him . Now who the hell will I  
replace him with ?

.

.

\*Princess\*

I couldn't believe it when Sambulo called and said my brother agreed to the negotiations

It's still a shock even now , I so badly want to hear this for myself

But I had one crazy council meeting , and now I'm very much so tired

But a call to Ledi won't hurt at all ,  
maybe that husband of hers told her

I get into my hut , and take off my  
clothes . Wrap just a towel , I have to  
take a shower after the call

So I can be able to sleep very well ,  
because I need it

I take my phone and call her , it rings for  
a while before she answers

Ledi : babe , sorry we just got home

Me : oh yes , you travelled safe ?

Ledi : we did , but you know Jetlag is doing the most

Me : let me not keep you , because you need the rest . I just have an ask here

Ledi : yes

Me : is he there ?

She laughs

Ledi : I'm heading to our room now , so  
fire away

Me : Sambulo says he said agreed to the  
negotiations

Ledi : he did

Now that's a relief

Me : wow , now I know you had  
something to do with that

She sighs

Ledi : he's happily married , for 18 years .  
And he has a son that's giving me grey  
hairs . It's just so selfish of him , to deny  
you all of that of which he has

Me : you're such a whole darling

Ledi : you should be let to live your life ,  
leave your idiotic handsome brother  
alone

We laugh

Me : let me leave you to rest

Ledi : we'll talk soon okay

Me : okay I love you

Ledi : I love you too

We hang up

Voice : should I be worried ?

I almost scream my lungs out , how did he get in here ?

Me : what's wrong with you ?

He laughs taking a seat next to me , and  
he plants a soft kiss on my lips

Sambulo : I don't know why your hut has  
Windows , I got through the back one

I laugh , and it's not funny at all

Me : we're acting like teenagers , and I  
can't wait for all this to be over and  
done with

Sambulo : give me two weeks max , and  
I'll have it all fixed



Me : I can't wait

Sambulo : today I just want to be with you , I want to have you in my arms the whole night

Me : I'm about to go take a shower , you want to join ?

Sambulo : you don't even need to ask

We get up and head to shower

- 
- 
-

\*Bianca\*

My grandmother is just trying to make me feel better

Like she's really trying her best , and I know she's not okay herself

And so I want to ask her if it's okay I tell my parents or should I wait until I'm back home

I know she will advise me better

I've finally gathered that strength to call home , it's been almost a week

And I know they can't be happy about this , and right now I shouldn't be distancing myself like this

Leo : princess

He's the one answering the call , I'm not even surprised

Me : my young king

Leo : when are you coming back home ?

Me : I ....

Mom : why are you answering calls that are not for you ?

Leo : oh

And that's him walking away , he's the twin that's just strange

Mom : Bia are you okay ? Baby I'm worried about you

The lump stuck on my throat

Mom : please talk to me

Me : I'm okay...mother

She sighs , I guess she can tell from my  
strained voice

Mom : I hope when you're ready , you'll  
know that you can tell me anything . You  
can talk to me

I wish I could , but I'm so scared

Me : I miss you guys

I'll rather change this topic

Mom : you know we miss you

Me : where is my boy and dad ?

Mom : you know him and his grapes ,  
they went to the vineyard

Me : please greet them for me

Mom : will do , is Nana good ?  
(Grandmother)

Me : yes....yes she's good

Mom : alright , behave there and don't give her troubles . I hope school work is still being done

Me : yes mother

That's a slight lie , because I've only started today

Mom : alright thank you for calling

Me : please let me talk to the young king

Mom : he's probably sulking , hold while  
I go get him

Leo is dramatic , but right now I need his  
happy pill . He will lift my mood I know

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*



My mind is all over the place , I fucking need the money . And a 100k a week , that will definitely set Bia and our baby up

I wouldn't even need to ask my parents for anything , and that's just how I want this to be

Now that they're back , I need to tell them about this issue

But this business with the Bishop , seems to be very dangerous . And I don't even know what it entails exactly

Mind you I already have the first 100k in my bank account , and it's already set in a trust for my baby girl

See me making plans with money that's not necessarily mine . Black Diamonds on the red market , that's no small thing

And what if I fucking mess up on this thing ? That guy will have me for breakfast

I tried calling Bia again and I'm still blocked , and I'm tired doing this shit with her now

JJ : what's up ?

Me : we need to go to KZN

JJ : we ? I wasn't looking to leave now

Me : you're not

JJ : okay so ?

Me : I need to go see Bia okay

JJ : hah

Me : come on

JJ : and let me guess , because the rents  
are back . You need me as back up

Me : you're too bright Jayden Junior  
Ngwenya

He laughs

JJ : how long ?

Me : however long it takes and she  
forgives me

JJ : hell no , just a few days or else I'm leaving you there

Dad : leaving who where ?

Shit , I hope he didn't hear any of what we were talking about

Me : me

Dad : I asked where ?

Me : oh in KZN

Dad : need I be asking you everything ?

Me : no , we were thinking of going there just for a few days

Dad : which kingdom ?

Me : not at the kingdoms

Dad : what are you up to ?

Me : nothing

My parents are always suspicious of me , and I'll never understand nor know why He walks out , and now this one looks at me

Me : stop

JJ : I didn't say anything , when do we leave ?

Me : in the afternoon , and go soften your aunt up

He laughs walking out , and my phone rings . It's a number I don't recognise , I answer

Me : hello

Ntsika : I call you , I expect your call to be answered by your tag

This guy , I look around and walk out

Me : what are you talking about ?

Ntsika : what am I paying you for ?

Me : to distribute...whoa wait , you seriously expect me to call myself a distributor ?

He goes quite , and I guess that answers me . He's so fucking crazy



Me : listen I need something from you

Ntsika : I did not call you to tell me your demands , just two days working for me and already you have needs from me ?

Me : I need a gun

That comes out as cold as ever

Ntsika : what kind ?

Shit , no what do you want with it ? And all that nonsense

Who is this guy like for real ?

Ntsika : let me know once you've made up your mind

Me : I need it today , I can't even contact you and ....

Ntsika : I said let me know , not contact me

Conversations with this guy , no ways . I really need to stop having them

Ntsika : I need you available on  
Wednesday

Me : that's in three days I...

Ntsika : get back to me about that gun ,  
I'm leaving Cape Town today . I've stuck  
around for too long

He drops the call , and the slight fear  
strikes in . But it's fine

The sooner the better , I get to know  
what I'm dealing with the better

.

\*INSERT 06\*

\*Ntsika\*

I look at him handling the gun , and he's  
doing it like a pro

It's like he's handled one before , like he knows how to fucking use it

Me : do you even know how to use that thing ?

TJ : no

He says so fucking proud , like I'm supposed to be impressed that I gave a clueless person a gun

Me : what happens when you get into it , and you need that ?

TJ : worry not , I'll learn on the person  
who's getting into it with me

I shake my head , seems like I have a  
case on my hands

Me : fire three shots , not less not more  
just three

He looks at me

Me : I don't have all day

He sighs , and aims and takes another  
look at me

Me : don't fire that thing with your eyes closed

TJ : I wasn't going to

And he fires three shots

Me : enough

He lowers his hand

TJ : see

He's so fucking cocky , I hope I never have to regret this

Me : you never let that gun out of your sight

TJ : noted

Me : see you Wednesday

He puts safety back , slides it on his waist. Takes the bag with his bullets and he leaves

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*



I ended up unblocking him on social media and there's nothing

Not that I'm surprised , ever since we've been together he doesn't use it regularly

But there's calls everyday , I don't why that makes me happy though

Nana : that white boy of yours is here

No ways , I know he's crazy but not this insane . Yes my grandmother knows him

But he's never , like ever come here .  
Especially when she's around , and to  
come at her straight

Me : here , like here ?

Nana : I don't know who does that boy  
think he is , but maybe it's because he's  
white . I really don't get your thing for  
white men , are there no any other  
colour men out there ? I asked your  
mother the very same thing

This woman is dramatic

Me : he's not white he's mixed

And I'm the crazy one of course

Me : his father is mixed , his grandmother was white and his grandfather is black . With a mixed father , he has a black mother . He's purely just mixed , just like I am

Nana : sweetheart you're white , and half black stop confusing yourself . And I'm leaving for that high tea in Sea Point , that boy must never sleep here at my house

I nod

Nana : come see him , I'll see you when I get back

Me : bye Nana (grandmother)

We both walk down , and this one is outside by the lawn

He looks so good , in black skinny jeans , white t-shirt with black sneakers . He's clean , and that's what makes him look so good all the time . Before you can even pay attention to his looks

TJ looks older , like much older than his 20 year old age It's like he's already way over above 20 , which I just don't get . And that makes him look so mature

You'd swear you're with someone who has already gotten life sorted

Nana : remember what I said

Me : he's leaving

She looks at me like I'm an idiot , but I don't see why I should hide it from him

She said he must not sleep here , so it won't happen

She leaves and I invite him inside , I still can't believe him . Arriving here like this

TJ : you know I know I messed up

Me : good for you

TJ : how's my baby doing ?

Me : fine , you know what I was actually laying down . So what brings you by ?

TJ : you're really going to punish me for something that really didn't mean a thing ?

Me : fact of the matter is that it happened , couldn't you keep your dick inside your pants ?

He sighs

Me : why are you not even denying this , and trying to play yourself a victim ?

TJ : because it didn't mean anything , so I have no reason to be lying about it

I feel a bit strained today

Me : I need to go lay down , when you're done with whatever you came here for leave

I walk up and he follows me , now I don't trust myself around him at all

And the fact that I am horny doesn't help the situation at all

I take my sleepers off and get into bed , he sits next to me



TJ : you're my girl , and you know I'm only for you

Me : but you have no problem sticking your dick everywhere

TJ : I...

Me : I really don't care to know , I told you we're done . The only thing connecting us is this baby

TJ : so you're not shutting me out right ?

Me : I'm not that bitchy

He smiles and leans down

Me : don't....

And his lips touch mine , my breathing increases

Me : Ty.....

TJ : I miss you

He shuts me up with a kiss , slow and passionate . He moves the sheets off me

Me : wait....

He lifts head , but his hand not stopping  
what it's doing

He looks at me we lock eyes , and I have  
no idea why I told him to wait

He takes my clothes off , leaving me with  
nothing but just my panty

That slowly soon follows , and he takes  
his t-shirt off , he gets on the bed

Buries his face deep between my thighs ,  
his tongue does wonders on my clit

He works on it , going down to my open  
with his finger . The more my moans  
increase

The more he picks his pace , he inserts  
on another finger . And that finishes me  
off

I'm very weak and not that strong

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Tyler Jnr\*

She's already worn out , just after two rounds . But I just need the last one for the road

An orgasms always drains her , she squirts too much . I don't even think it's normal

That's why sex always drains her , but my girl never denies me

She grabs on my shoulders , moving underneath me . She's meeting my deep thrusts with my pace

Even when you're on top , she'll never lay still like a chicken being ready to be roasted

Bia : please ...I can't...anymore

I pick you up my pace

Bia : yeahhhh oh my god....

And the warmth comes in a rush , I get off and take my dick out . And she squirts , I tap my dick on her nuna for a few seconds . And I put it right back in

A few minutes thrusting in I cum , a few seconds pass I'm still on top of her

I lift my head and look at her , move to her lips and we kiss

I move over to the side , we stay in silence for a while

Bia : I'm hungry

Me : is there food or should I order for you ?

Bia : I think there's something

She gets up and sits on the bed , taking her clothes

Bia : you know this doesn't change anything right ?

Here we go

Bia : it was just sex , and it didn't mean anything so don't get any ideas that maybe we're back together or anything like that . Because we're not and ..

Me : wait , so this is us today ? Me and you can now just have sex , sex that



means absolutely fucking nothing ? We do that shit now ?

Bia : it's a thing it can be done so why not ?

Me : you're fucking with me right now

Bia : all I'm saying is that it didn't mean anything

Me : so you were just using me for sex ?

Bia : I'm pregnant and always horny so , and if it'll be a problem for you then I

can always find someone who will help me

When you're being tested , you can fucking see it . And that's what's happening right now

Me : you're pissing me off right now , and trading on a thin line . You will have some idiot fuck you , while you're pregnant with my child ? If you're tired of living , just fucking tell me . And I'd gladly help you , do whatever shit you want to do . Keep my child out of it

I get up and put my clothes on , she's never seen me angry . Nor heard my voice like this , so I know she's scared right now

So I best leave , before she pisses me off worse than she's already done

Me : have someone fuck you while you're pregnant with my child , we'll have one different conversation than you using me for sex

I walk out , she'll probably be crying as I'm leaving

But fuck she pushed me , and I don't care if it was a joke or what

Right now I feel so fucking degraded

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Bianca\*

I wasn't trying to get him upset like that , it's just that I felt cheap

I don't understand why I couldn't just refuse him , there was no need for us to sleep together

I'm here trying to heal from knowing that he slept around . Yet I've opened a door for him , to think that all is well between us and it's not

After he left I couldn't even eat , and I'm still hungry even now . My crying session was more important than food

You look at TJ , and you don't miss his presence at all . So seeing him all angry like that

That scared me to the core , and now I know never to mess with him again

My phone rings and it's him , I so badly wanted him to call . I unblocked him after he left

Me : hello

He sighs

TJ : stop crying , come over . Or should I come fetch you ?

Me : where are you ?

Listen to me

TJ : I'll send you the address

Me : okay

TJ : you're coming ?

Me : yes

TJ : okay drive safe

Me : I will

We hang up and he sends the location of where he is , and it's like 20 minutes away from here

I grab Nana's car keys and leave , hoping I don't run into trouble . This is South Africa

Things are not the same as in Tuscan , at 17 driving alone like this could mean trouble for me

Although I do have a driver's licence , an adult is still required



I arrive at the apartment , and I don't get why he rented an apartment . Instead of just going to a hotel

I knock at the door , few seconds later he opens . And he's in sweatpants , shirtless walking barefoot

Looks like he was sleeping , or he was just drinking . You can never tell the difference with him

Me : hi

TJ : hi

Me : can I come in ?

He nods , I walk past him and this place is clean

Me : you came alone ?

TJ : JJ went to see his girlfriend

I nod , and there's pizza box on the kitchen counter I can't help myself

I open it and it's fresh , and looks like it has just been delivered . I devour on it

TJ : that's mine

Me : and I'm hungry

He comes and sits down

TJ : was it your plan to hurt me ?

Okay that wasn't so nice of me

Me : I just wanted to make it clear , that  
it didn't mean we're okay and back  
together again

TJ : will you really let another idiot touch you like that ?

Never

Me : no

TJ : you're my girl , I love you and you know that . I fucking messed up and we both know that shit , let me try and rectify it . I'm all about you , and I don't want no one touching what's mine

Me : but you gave mine away , and now me and a whole lot others know it

TJ : the difference between just mere sex and making love

Me : I don't know I wasn't there

He looks down , and he's suddenly popping veins on the sides of his head

Now this I've never seen , it's new to me.  
He's never been like this before

TJ : I'm sorry I got angry like that , just that I don't want to be shut out when it comes to the baby . I want to be here

every step of the way , and I want to be the only one to be pleasuring you

Me : but we're not together anymore

TJ : yes that's what you're saying , but that doesn't mean I can't scratch your itch

I laugh , he's just being crazy

Me : so that's our new arrangement ?

TJ : whenever you're horny , I'm here

Me : wow

He smiles , and I guess he's forgiven me  
for my outburst and he's over his

Me : I don't know how that will work out

TJ : just don't ever use me like that

Dude took a knock

Me : I'm sorry

And I really am

I get up and walk to him . I say nothing but cup his face , and give him a kiss he gladly returns . He's still hard , his dick is poking me so bad . I feel like being naked right now

TJ : spend the night

Me : no

TJ : it's already late , and you're here already so ?

Me : I'm not spending the night , I'm leaving



His hands trail to my ass , and I'm so not gifted like African girls . Unfortunately on that , I just took more on the white side

But it's not flat , it's just one cute tiny little bun . And he loves it

Me : I'll spend the night tomorrow

TJ : at least give me one round before you leave

Me : with all the sex of today

TJ : you were just using me , and that took the whole urge out of me . Come on , you need to help redeem myself . After making me feel used like that , I feel degraded

Me : I won't make it to your room

TJ : it's fine , well have it right here

He says already placing me on the counter , his hands rest on my thighs and he brushes them up and down

.

.

\*INSERT 07\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

We're having breakfast with JJ , and for some whatever reason he brought this village girlfriend of his here

I don't even know why , but I won't say anything . I just don't know how Bia is going to react to this

She might just not like the fact that , there's a girl here . Especially after what happened

Even though she's with JJ , women are crazy species I don't think men will ever understand

I really don't want to think nor believe that we're fine , just because we slept together yesterday

I still have to prove myself to her , and that means cutting off certain things

JJ : is everything okay ?

I turn back and look at her , she looks busy washing dishes .

Me : what is she doing here ?

I lower my voice

JJ : fuck off , you had your crazy baby mama here last night . And you fucked...

I choke on the food

JJ : don't think I don't know , you creep

I laugh

Me : dude come on

JJ : you two are just mentally insane ,  
and if she can come here . Surely my  
girlfriend can as well

Me : this was for us to just crib in for a  
few days , not a couple's ...

JJ : fuck off

Okay he's not having any of it

Me : fine I'm leaving

He shrugs his shoulders

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

I didn't wake up on the good side of bed today , like I'm not okay at all

I'm swollen like crazy , my hands and my feet . Don't get me started on my face

And I look two sizes pregnant , than my size . This belly has grown , I really don't understand what's going on

Nana : you need to calm down

I'm not in pain , but I look awful . And I can't help but be worried



Like what's wrong with me ? And as far as I know , I'm not allergic to anything

Me : please hand me my phone

She made me bath with salt earlier on , thinking that it will help

But I don't think it has done much , I still look the same .

Nana : here

I take the phone from her

Me : thank you

I make a call to TJ , I know I have to see him later on . But I need to tell him this

In case I gave to go see a doctor , he needs to know so he doesn't say I've shut him out

TJ : my girl

I sniff

TJ : hey what's wrong ?

Me : I'm not okay

TJ : are you home ?

Me : yes

TJ : okay talk to me , what's going on ?

Me : my whole body is swollen

TJ : what ?

Me : I look so awful , I really don't know what's wrong ?

TJ : wait are you in pain ?

Me : no

TJ : I'm coming , I'm taking you to the doctor

Me : Okay

TJ : get ready I'll be there soon

Me : okay

TJ : I love you alright

I smile

Me : Nana is here (grandmother)

He laughs

TJ : okay , I'm coming

Me : see you soon

We hang up

Nana : the children of today

Me : we respected you

Nana : I thought you broke up

I want to laugh , but I'll pass

Me : we are

Nana : could have fooled me

Me : I'm telling you

She shakes her head

Me : he's coming to take me to the doctor , that's fine right ?

Nana : I think that's better

Me : okay thanks , let me go get ready

Nana : find a dress it would be much better

Me : I have short tight dresses

Nana : go to your mother's room , I'm sure you'll find something in there

Me : really ?

I just say , my mother has style . So I know it's not something outdated

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*Tyler Jnr\*

Seeing her , I don't think that I've ever been so worried in my whole entire life



She looks so bad , like bad of 8 months pregnant . Baby ready to pop

And I'm kind of upset , because I don't understand why she didn't call me right away

I was busy chilling all morning , not having any idea what's going on with her

Anything could have happened , anything could have gone wrong

Bia : I'm sorry

I just look at her and say nothing , I don't  
wasn't to say something only to spit  
something that'll hurt her

The doctor walks in , and the first thing  
they did when we arrived was to take  
tests

Me : doc is everything okay ?

Doc : this is very strange Mr Manzini

Me : what ?

Doc : we can't find anything wrong with Ms Ferrari

Me : what do you mean you can't find anything wrong ?

Doc : the blood tests are clear

Me : are you telling me that you're not seeing her

Doc : well I can

Me : well does she look fine to you ?

Doc : uhm not really

Me : now do your job and find out what the fuck is wrong with her

Doc : yes we intend to run a few more tests , right now I would like to check if the baby is well

Me : don't let me tell you how to do your job then

He get busy with her , and now I can't ignore the worry on her face

Which is understandable , how can she be this swollen and the doctor can't find what's wrong with her

Me : what is it ?

It's his facial expression that's getting me alarmed

Me : I asked you a question

Bia : TJ please calm down

I avoid even looking at her

Doc : she's only 7 weeks pregnant

Me : we know that , is the baby okay ?

He nods

Me : answer me with words

Doc : yes the baby is fine....but ...but

Me : but what ?

He's really annoying me right now

Doc : this baby looks twice the size it should be

Me : what do you mean ?

Doc : a 7 weeks is ...this one is at 14 weeks and not 7 as the mother is .

Me : does that even make sense to you ?  
What the fuck are you saying ?

Bia : TJ , I told you I...I told you this....I....

She's crying now , I lean down and kiss her forehead

Doc : I can already tell the gender of the baby , she's passed 12 weeks . At 7 weeks I'm not supposed to be seeing this

He looks at us very strange

Doc : I think I need to get a second opinion at this

Me : no

Doc : Mr Manzini ...

Me : I said no , run your tests . Find out what's wrong with her



Doc : the baby is....

Me : leave

He looks at us , and I shoot him a death stare he sighs and walks towards the door

Me : and no one , I mean no one is supposed to find out about this

He nods and walks out

Me : I'll fix this

Bia : I'm scared , what is this ? It can't be a normal baby

Me : shhhh , I'll fix this

I don't know how , but I think it's time now I call home . We can't be kids and dealing with this alone

The parents now needs to know about this , it's no use derailing it

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*INSERT 08\*

\*Bianca\*

I've never been so scared like I am right now , and it's not helping the way TJ is so upset

If he had his way , he would bring this whole building down

I've tried telling him to calm down , but it's pointless . He's having none of it

He's the least of my worry though , I don't understand how a 7 weeks baby

Has grown to a 14 weeks baby , like it doesn't make sense at all

This can't be no normal baby at all , I refuse to believe that

And its what scares me the most , if I'm not caring a baby then what's this inside of me ?

TJ is looking so deep in thoughts , I wonder what's occupying his mind

Right now all I know is that I just need my mother , I want her here

It's a shame that I have to tell her the truth right now , while in this situation

I call her and her phone rings unanswered , I call my father

I just hope he's with her , and I need to call Nana as well . I want her here too

Dad : princess

Just hearing his voice , makes me so emotional

Me : is mother there ?

Dad : why are you crying ?

My parents know me so well , and the fact that my nose is already blocked it doesn't help either

Dad : she's here

Me : please give her the phone

I know his mood has now changed , he's worried . But because I want my mother, he will let me talk to her

Mom : baby what's wrong ? Bia please talk to me , baby stop pushing me away . I'm really worried about you

I just break down , and TJ comes and he holds me . Brings my head to his chest

Mom : Bianca

This woman doesn't need my stress right now , she's heavily pregnant

Me : I want to come home

TJ looses his hand around me a bit , I know this is not what he expected

But I'll rather be home with my parents right now , than in a foreign country with no family . Nana is here yes , but I don't want to be a burden to her at all



Mom : where is Nana ? (Grandmother)

Me : home , mother I'm in hospital

Mom : hospital , what why ?

She's panicking now

Dad : amore you need to calm down

Mom : baby what happened ?

Instead of talking I just break down , TJ  
takes the phone and drops it

If I wasn't such a mess , I would be biting  
his head right now

.

.

.

.

\*Tuscan Kingdom\*

Queen Mbalenhle paces around , and  
the king tries to calm her down

But it's deeming to be pointless , she's worried about her daughter more than her own pregnancy right now

Queen Mbali : we need to go to South Africa right away

King Ciro : at least call your mother , maybe she's already at the hospital . And she can alert us how bad the situation is there

Queen Mbali : my baby is in hospital and crying , and she needs me right now

She cries sitting down

King Ciro : it's no use getting worked up  
right now

Queen Mbali : am I such a bad mother ?

She says with pain , that the King even  
feels it from her voice

King Ciro : why would you say such ?

Queen Mbali : my daughter left home ,  
she couldn't tell me that she's pregnant .

But was able to tell my mother ? Have I failed so bad ?

King Ciro : no...no don't blame yourself for this okay ? Bianca is growing , she's a young woman now . Maybe she just felt that it'll be comfortable to talk with Nana

Queen Mbali : because I make her uncomfortable to talk to me ?

King Ciro : stop okay , just stop . I won't let you do this to yourself , only she knows why she left . Look at it this way , right now she's going through a scare I

believe . And you're the first one she calls to tell she's in hospital , not Nana but you

She sighs

Queen Mbali : we should go

King Ciro : there's no changing your mind so I'll get the jet ready

He knows his wife also wants to be with their child right now . After the call with Bianca the queen called her mother

And she's the one who told her that  
Bianca is pregnant

This has hit hard on the queen , but right  
now she'll put her expressions aside and  
be the mother her daughter needs

They're both disappointed , but it has  
happened . They can't take the baby  
back now

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

What Bianca said to her mother hit hard,  
the fact that she wants to go back home

We never even spoke about that , and  
this happened today

We're both overwhelmed , and scared to  
be honest . This is scary

Even for me it is , nothing we heard  
today has made sense . And it doesn't  
help us that it was just us alone here

Thankfully her grandmother arrived , a  
while back . And I've asked to go out



I've called JJ , I just want someone in my corner right now

And he said he's on his way , and now I have to make that call to my parents

I call my father , I could call my mother .  
But that woman would strangle me over the phone

I know my father is even worse than her,  
but right now I prefer him

Dad : Junior

Must he be calling me that ? I don't like that name even his own Tyler is fine

Me : dad

I sit down on the bench outside

Dad : what's wrong ?

Me : uhm there's something I need to talk to you about

Now I feel like shedding a few tears , this is fucking heavy . And it makes me wonder who hard is it for Bia

Dad : shouldn't you be home wanting to have talks with me ?

Me : I...

Shit this is even harder than I thought , I don't even know what to say

Me : my girlfriend is pregnant , and I was going to tell you this when you got back . I just ran into some problems with her , I just wanted to fix those first . And now she's sick in hospital , doctors don't know what's wrong with her . And the baby is ....the baby is bigger than how

she should be . They say she's 7 weeks pregnant , but the baby is 14 weeks

With just one huge sigh he drops the call and I know I'm in shit

Voice : hey

It's JJ sitting down next to me

JJ : they're okay right ?

I wipe my tear off and nod

JJ : what happened ?

Me : I called dad

JJ : shit

Me : yeah he dropped the call on me

JJ : okay we don't know his state right now , so let's go inside and see the mother and the baby

Me : the baby you say ?

JJ : doesn't matter what you say , she's still your baby

He has no idea what this is doing to me  
right now

I don't even believe that thing is a baby  
right now

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*Camps Bay CPT\*

Ledi : what ?

She looks at her husband , eyes popped out . Heart beating so fast like it'll pop out of her chest

Ledi : Tyler what did you say ?

He sighs

Tyler : we need to go to Durban right now

Ledi : do you understand what this means ? It's history repeating itself all over again , on someone else's poor

child . Tyler how did your son end up making a baby , not knowing who he is ?

She's a crying mess right now

Ledi : we agreed , I begged you to tell TJ this . Before he made such mistakes , I begged you and you said you will do it

Tyler : I was going to tell him ...

Ledi : why didn't he know all along ?  
What were you waiting for , exactly a moment and time like this ?



He shakes his head

Ledi : I don't know how you're to fix this, I fought to keep my son . We don't know who this girl is , do you understand that to force her to get rid of that baby inside of her . You'll need to tell her the truth , about these curses of yours ? A whole totally stranger

Tyler : this is messed up

Ledi : you're telling me , TJ should have known about this a long time ago .  
Before he even knew that his dick can

get up , and knowing where he has to  
stick it in when it's hard

Tyler looks at her , not knowing how to  
respond nor react to what she just said

He wonders if she even heard herself

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*INSERT 09\*

\*Princess\*

I'm a bit slightly worried , I've been trying to get a hold of Ledi and Tyler since last night

And no one is answering their calls , now I don't know what's wrong . I'm even a bit sceptical to call TJ , he's a child and if

something is wrong I don't want him  
worried

Sambulo : will you just say what's  
bothering you ?

I lotion my hands

Me : when last did you speak to your  
sister ?

Sambulo : yesterday around noon

Me : okay

Sambulo : just an okay ?

I sigh , turn back and face him

Me : I've been trying to call them

Sambulo : them with Tyler ?

Me : yeah , and no one is answering  
their calls

Sambulo : maybe they're busy

Me : since last night , and this morning  
as well ?

Sambulo : now that's concerning

Me : maybe I should call my father or  
Prince , maybe anyone home

Sambulo : let me call my sister first ,  
before you worry everyone

He takes his phone and calls her , okay  
now it's going on voicemail

Me : see ?

Sambulo : don't jump into conclusions ,  
let's give them this day . I'm sure there's

a logical reason for all this , before you  
give yourself grey hairs

I slightly laugh but then I'm still worried ,  
I won't lie

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Bianca\*

The doctor had to admit me over night ,  
and that call to my mother

Might have been a mistake , because it  
has just stirred up a lot of things

Hearing that my parents know , I'm  
pregnant now . And they're coming this  
side

Nana wasn't holding back clearly , when  
she was talking to them

But I don't fault her , this whole situation  
is beyond me . I need my family here



I don't know what the tests will prove or say , and what might be the solution to this

Nana slept here , along with TJ and JJ . It pained me honestly

Seeing them sleeping in chairs just because of me , as for TJ he didn't sleep a wink

Which is scary , I would fall asleep for like 20 minutes and every time I wake up he's still wide awake

TJ : were you serious ?

There's just the two of us now , Nana went home to bath and so did JJ

Me : about ?

TJ : that you want to leave , you want to go back to Italy ?

Oh and then there's that

Me : I just want to be with my parents right now

He sighs

Me : papi don't get me wrong , me and you we're...

TJ : I'm already getting you wrong , stop with that nonsense of yours . There's no break up right now , we're going through shit . And that's the last thing we need

Where did the break up go ?

Me : but I said don't get me wrong

TJ : don't say things , that make me get you wrong

This one though , I can never win with TJ.  
And his phone rings he looks at it once

TJ : my parents are here

I don't know why I'm being scared , but it's crazy to be honest . The slight fear that hits me

Tyler : I hope you think this thing of yours , I want be with you through this

time . And you going back to Italy right now , it does not work for me

He kisses my cheek , still sweet even when I look awful

Me : bring something to eat

He smiles and walks out , now I wish Nana can get back here

I don't want to meet the family alone , without anyone of my family present

.

.

\*Sambulo\*

Princess sure managed to worry me a bit, it's so unlike my sister not to attend to her phone

I just only hope that she's okay , right now I so wish I was back in South Africa. Because then I would go and check for her there myself

Ledi is all I have as a family , we only have each other . And it's only fair that I worry about her

We talk everyday , and it's almost midday still nothing

I call my kids , I hope they can ease my worry right now

Pabi : hi daddy

Me : hi baby are you girls okay ?

Pabi : yes we're okay

Me : you sound a bit sad

Pabi : it's our spa day out with aunty

Oh shit !

Me : oh baby , aunty is not feeling well

Thuto : but daddy she didn't say

They're only 7 and 9 , but they fill my hands

Me : She called daddy , I just forgot to tell you



Pabi : will she be okay ?

Thuto : maybe we should go see her

Oh hell no !

Me : uncle Ty has taken her to the doctor , just let her rest for today okay ?

Them : okay

Now I'm even more worried , my sister would never miss her dates with them

She always makes it a point , that she pitches up when she has something with those two

Me : okay I'll see you girls soon , daddy loves you

Thuto : I love you myself

Pabi : you could have just said we love you too daddy

Thuto : tell him yourself

Pabi : but...

Me : Paballo please leave your sister , I'll call you later again

Pabi : okay daddy

She hangs up , maybe it's time I left . As much as I'm happy being with my woman

There seem to be a situation back home

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*Tyler Jnr\*

The fear just to see them , I'm sure  
they're not happy with me right now

I wasn't even sure that they'll come ,  
after my father dropped the call on me  
like that

I can only imagine , how angry they are  
right now . But I can't go back

And I can't change the hands of time , I  
just have to brace myself and do this . I  
walk out and spot them , my mother has  
a bag of food . And the woman looks like  
she's aged three times

Like what the fuck have I done ? I walk to them before I even greet it's the look from my father , it keeps me at a distance

Mom : where is she ?

Her tone is calm as ever , but that's not her true emotions

Me : inside her ward

Mom : what did the doctors say today ?

Me : almost the same thing as yesterday

She sighs

Dad : why were you quite all this time ?  
We could have made means and  
prevented all of this

Means ? What is he talking about

Me : you were in Botswana when I found  
out , but I swear I was going to tell you

Dad : now you better think how you're  
to fix this , because that girl in there is  
not carrying a normal baby...

Mom : it's still a baby

Me : whoa what are you talking about ?

On a normal day , I would never to my father . You always watch and count your words with Tyler Oceans

Dad : that..baby , it has ability and ...that's just not no normal baby

He shakes his head

Me : what do you mean abilities ?

He sighs , and now I'm worried . I think he's even failing to explain this thing of his

Dad : I should have told you this , before you even reached 18 . Our family , from your great grandfather Dante Oceans . We suffer from a certain curse of some kind , we have certain abilities . And it's just rarely for a normal human being , to carry a seed from us

Me : dad !

He's just dragging this , and I want him to get to the point



Dad : you're a half god half human

Okay this is film

Dad : that baby in there is probably feasting already on that girl , we feed off on blood and raw meat that's when we can't control the crave . But once we do rare meat does it

I should be disgusted right now right ?  
But I'm not , because I eat rare meat all the time . If meat is not dripping blood , then it's not for me . I just thought it's preference and nothing else

Me : are you saying that thing...

Mom : it's a baby

Me : a baby that's killing it's own mother?

She sighs , a tear escapes my eye . What am I going to do ?

How in the hell am I going to help Bianca with this ? How do I tell her ?

Me : you should have told me , now I've gone and killed someone's child

Mom : don't talk like that , she's not dead

Me : well she's dying isn't she ?

Dad : Tyler we can deal with these tantrum issues of yours later , can you take us to her now

This one has no chill whatsoever

Me : how did I live and not kill you ?

I'm looking at my mother , she looks at him and back at me

Mom : you were born at just 5 months ,  
and I almost lost my life while still  
pregnant with you . When you were  
born , I had to be cut . To avoid loosing  
more blood already , than the one you  
had already sucked out of me

I can tell this is bringing her pain , having  
the relieve all of that

And it doesn't help that this situation  
has happened now

I can't even comprehend everything all  
at once

.

\*INSERT 10\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

We walk inside the room , and seems like she's just gotten off the phone

The swelling has slowly gone down , and this thing is making her look like she's 12

The look my father gives me when he looks at her

I'm sure he's already concluded in his mind , just how much more I've just fucked up

And I know I have , she's young I can't dispute that . But she's not a baby either

Me : she's 17

I just have to say , before he kills me for statutory rape

Me : babe ...this is my dad and mom

She tries to sit up

Mom : no..no don't strain yourself

She helps her lay back down

Mom : how are you feeling ?

Bia : just okay

Mom : you're not in any pain ?

Bia : no

Mom : okay

She looks a bit relieved hearing that

Dad : come here

He pulls me further away from them

Dad : where are the parents of this  
child?



Me : in...

The door opens and the parents walk in ,  
I've never met them . But I've seen their  
pictures

King Ferrari : what's going on here ?

I wasn't expecting them here this fast ,  
but they're royals I'm sure they have jets  
and all

Dad : boy what have you done ?

Shit , so the rumours are true

Dad : couldn't you go and hurt someone's else's daughter ? It had to be a Ferrari's daughter ? Do we lack women in South Africa ?

Shit okay , that's a lot now

King Ferrari : I asked a question

This man is scaring me , he's old alright .  
But he looks like he's 25 and he might  
fucking take me on

Mom : can we just not do this here ? Not  
infront of the child

And her mother goes to her , they both  
just break down . It's a heart-breaking  
sight

My mother walks out crying , my father  
looks at me

Dad : let's go

We walk out along with her father

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

I feel like something is being hid from me , like these people share some kind of a history I know nothing about

The way my father was looking at Mr Manzini , and the way he also talked to his son

There's something going on there , and from what Mr Manzini said

I gather they know each other , and whatever it is its not good

And probably now this situation has  
messed things even worse

Mom : what's wrong is the baby okay ?

She's disappointed it's all written on her  
face , even though she did not utter  
those words

Me : the baby is not normal

Mom : what do you mean ?

Me : I'm only 7 weeks but she's already  
14 weeks

Mom : but how ?

Me : I don't know , and the doctors don't know as well

Mom : oh my baby , you're so young for this

Me : mother I'm scared

Mom : it's alright , I'm here now . Daddy and I will fix this

I don't know how we fix something we don't even know

\*Tyler Jnr\*

No one was so not ready for this ,  
especially me

The punch this man just gave me , right  
after my father tells him everything

And my father is just sitting down on the couch , chilled like I did not just get punched right now

Me : I ...

King Ferrari : you Oceans people never learn , it was your father and then you and now it's your fucking brat

Okay that's not nice , like I'm anything but a brat . And clearly this goes far back

Dad : you think if I knew , I would have let my son date your daughter ?



King Ferrari : I don't care to know , now here is what's going to happen . You will keep this beast son of yours away from my daughter , and you boy you will walk back in that room and tell her . You will tell her everything , and leave nothing behind . While you're at that , you figure how the fuck you're going to deal with this . I'm not loosing my daughter , and I'm definitely not loosing my granddaughter. You're the fucking inhuman beasts , so you fix this shit . Or else blood will be spilled and no one will be spared , don't even think you have the upper hand over me

He walks out , and my jaw fucking hurts like shit

Dad : go deal with this

What are these two trying to do ? Shit !  
How the hell am I going to explain this to Bia ?

He was all fine telling king Ferrari , but now he wants me to go tell my girlfriend?

Why can't he just go ahead and tell her himself ?

\*Sambulo\*

I've been trying to reach my sister , the whole day . And it's already late in the afternoon

I'm seriously all worried right now , and Princess might not be happy with me leaving

I had guys go check on them , and they're not at their house

My phone rings and thank God it's her , I answer right away

Me : I've been worried sick

She sighs

Me : what's wrong ? Are you guys okay ?

Ledi : your nephew has gone and put us in his situation

Me : his situation ?

Ledi : he got Ferrari's daughter pregnant

Me : wait what ?

Ledi : it's a double mess right ?

Me : shit , and the baby ?

Ledi : she's 14 weeks already , and the mother is only 7 weeks pregnant

Me : damn

Ledi : you can imagine how furious the father is , and the mother is not hearing anything . Just being by her daughter's side

Me : to think years ago you stood together

She sighs , I swear my sister needs me right now . Princess will just have to understand

Me : where are you guys right now ?

Ledi : in Durban

Me : and that Alessandro is there as well?

Ledi : yes , the grandmother just arrived as well

Me : I'll be there tomorrow

Ledi : Sam thank you , I know you're dealing with a whole lot right now

Me : you need me , so I'll be there

Ledi : thank you

Me : stay strong alright , and can those two not cause havoc there

She laughs

Ledi : the king already gave your nephew a punch

Me : well it's his daughter

Ledi : my poor son

Me : he's growing up



Ledi : let's talk again tomorrow , I need to call my girls I feel so bad I missed our date

Me : just tell them you're not feeling well , that's what I told them

Ledi : thank you

Me : I love you okay

Ledi : I love you too

We hang up , and I book the flight  
already . Even though it's during the day,  
but by noon I'll be there

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 11\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

She was asleep , when I came to see her  
last night

And I couldn't talk to her about  
anything, I had to sleep outside her  
room

Because her parents were in there with  
her the whole night

They just left now , and I'm battling with  
myself to go inside

My father told me that she has to leave this place , it's no use keeping her

She won't get any help , if anything they might just want to turn her into a study of some sort

And he's right about that , her pregnancy is not normal . It can even make national news , the less people know about this the better

And so she has to leave this place , I don't even know how to break the news to her right now

My phone rings and I'm right at the door, she turns and looks at me

I look at the phone and it's a number I don't recognise , it can only be one person

Me : yes

Ntsika : what did I say to you ?

Me : I will not fucking call myself a distributor

She looks at me I look away , thought I'm  
whispering

Ntsika : I hear you're in some sort of a  
predicament

Me : what ?

I lower my voice

Ntsika : I don't want any problems with  
that distribution , you have two days to  
get your shit together

Me : I know what you pay me for

Ntsika : good

He drops the call , now he's the last thing I need to be worried about

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Bianca\*

That call seemed so suspicious , I wonder what's going on with him

He walks in and plants a kiss on my forehead

TJ : my girl

Me : we're not together

He smiles

TJ : don't start on me with that

Me : what's wrong ?

He sighs , and sits down on the bed next to me



TJ : everything is just so wrong

Me : we will get over this

He shakes his head

Me : papi

TJ : my parents told me something

Me : okay

He turns his head and I see the mark on  
his cheek

Me : who hit you ?

He smiles

TJ : your father

Me : what ...why ?

I hold his chin , and this looks bad . What kind of a father do I have though ?

TJ : worry not , my father just sat and watched yours punch me . And it'll fade

Me : this is so wrong

TJ : he's just an angry father , I get where he's coming from

Me : but not this way , they didn't even show any kind of anger towards me

TJ : you're their daughter , and it turns out our fathers hate each other . And now because of this and everything else, someone might just die

I sit up straight

Me : Tyler what are you talking about ?

TJ : my mother said I was born at 5 months ...

Me : what ?

He nods

Me : what kind of a child is born at 5 months ?

TJ : the kind that's born with a curse of some sort , and no mortal human being can be able to carry the seed and live . Because it feeds off the blood of the mother carrying it

Me : Tyler Junior Manzini , are you hearing yourself ?

He bows his head , and brushes his hands on his head . With such a huge sigh

Me : TJ !

I raise my voice and already I'm crying

TJ : I didn't know I swear I...

Me : what kind of a monster are you , and this thing of yours ?

TJ : I...

Me : it's killing me

TJ : I know and I'm sorry

Me : I want it dead , I want it out of me .  
You will take this thing out of me ....I  
don't want it , take it out

I scream my lungs out , the door opens  
my parents and his walk in

Me : leave !

TJ : sweet....

Me : leave get out !

He gets up , my mother comes to me . I  
wail on her chest

Dad : see your doing Oceans

Their egos is the least of my problems  
right now , I have a monster baby inside  
of me. That's draining me of my blood ,  
worse I have been dating one hella  
handsome monster

Mr Oceans : your daughter needs to leave this place , we all know what's wrong with her . The last thing we want , is all this known by outsiders

This man , his son is seriously the worst version of him

- .
- .
- .
- .

**\*Sambulo\***



It's one sombre mood , no one is saying anything to anyone

I arrived very late , and I didn't even get to go see this girl

I don't think I even want to see Alessandro , I hate him to the core

There's seriously no love lost between us, but this is for family

Me : how is she holding up ?

TJ gets up and walks out , we're all at a Hotel at Umhlanga rocks

JJ : I'll go talk to him

He also walks out

Me : that bad

Tyler : I don't understand , why did it have to be that idiot's daughter ?

Me : well you're in-laws now

He chuckles annoyed

Tyler : it'll be a cold day in hell , before TJ gives a Ferrari my surname

Ledi : that white man , will behead your son before he even thinks about it

This is damn intense

Me : is the girl okay though ?

Ledi : for now yes , and she's not in any pain nor does she have any of the bruises I had

Me : okay maybe that's better

Tyler : there's nothing better there , she just carrying another beast . Either she gets rid of it , or she dies . And right now the important thing , is that she leaves that place

Ledi : I think her mother is open to that

Me : why did she even stay so many days there to even begin with ?

They both look at me

Me : okay sorry , never mind I asked

Ledi : I'll go see her sometime during the day , she took the truth very hard . And ended up kicking TJ out

Ah that explains why he looks like the world is coming to an end

That boy is having it hard , no one can deny that

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Bianca\*

My mother didn't want to leave my side,  
but she's drained

And it doesn't help that she's pregnant ,  
she needs the rest herself

My father had to force her to leave and  
go home to get some rest , and she  
finally gave in

I feel like my mind is about to blow , I  
can't believe all of this

And my father had to repeat it to me  
again , and believe me you I got it all well

I'm carrying a little Oceans monster inside of me , and it's sucking my blood

What kind of scary movie is this ? And how did that woman carry a whole monster for 5 months inside of her ?

And it got to live , because here he is today . And he's left me with his own little monster as well

And I'm sure it's going to be so cute like it's father , pity I don't wanna see it . I will not risk my life for her no ways , if I knew all this I would have long gotten rid of her

This is no baby , I doubt it's anything  
even human . Drinking my blood while  
inside my tummy

This is crazy

A slight knock at the door , I look and it's  
his mother

Mrs Manzini : can I come in ?

I smile nodding , I like this woman . I  
want to be just like her when I grow to .



There's nothing wrong with my mother ,  
only if I turn out like her . I'd die very  
young

Mrs Manzini : how are you feeling  
today?

She puts the food on the stand , and my  
stomach growl . We both laugh

Mrs Manzini : do eat , because it's food  
for you

Me : thank you

I sit up and eat

Mrs Manzini : I am really sorry about all of this

I wish she didn't say that

Me : I don't want this

She looks very offended by my words , maybe because it's her son's monster

Me : I was just about to catch some sleep , my Nana will be here soon to take me home (grandmother)

That's a lie I just woke up , just that we're being awkward right now . And I don't want that

Mrs Manzini : oh so you're leaving ?

I nod , it's what they think is best so yeah

Mrs Manzini : okay I'll leave you to get some rest

I nod

Me : thank you for the food

She smiles

Mrs Manzini : anytime

She turns walking towards the door , and I feel a slight movement inside my tummy . Like a kick of some sort

I put my hand on my stomach , and this is very strange . I get one hell of a feeling of love , I've never felt before

Me : please wait

She turns and looks at me

Me : please can I ask you something ?

She walks back , and pulls a chair she sits down . I take a few deep breaths

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 12\*

\*Bianca\*

How do I even say this ? Without offending her

Clearly I've already crossed that , when we were talking about the baby few minutes ago

And I don't want to do that again , so I have to watch my words . And pay careful attention to what I say

Me : please bare with me , I don't know how to say this

She smiles

Mrs Manzini : it's just us three in here ,  
just say anything . It's girls no one will  
say anything

See she's already acknowledging even  
this one

Me : papi....

Lord help me , this is his mother . I can't  
be addressing him with nicknames

Me : TJ is normal , like he looks very  
much normal . There's nothing alarming  
about him , that maybe suggests that

he's half human or anything like that .  
He looks completely human

Mrs Manzini : yes

Me : how did you do it ? At 5 months  
how did you manage to keep him that  
long , inside of you without loosing your  
life ?

She looks to be hard at thought

Me : I'm sorry to bother you

She smiles and holds my hand



Mrs Manzini : nonsense

She takes a deep breath

Mrs Manzini : you see unlike you and TJ , my husband and I we were not in agreement . He wanted me to kill the baby , and I wanted to keep it . We even separated because of that , I told him to stay away from me and my child . But he still pulled up , last minute . I still appreciated that though , that he didn't let me do all that alone . And the advantage was knowing what the baby wants

Father deliver me from evil

Me : blood ?

She nods

Mrs Manzini : I wanted neither of us to lose our lives , but at one point I was ready to lose mine for him . I started drinking blood , and that made him to stop sucking on mine . It did not stop his growth , nor his cravings . But at least I managed to gather some strength

I don't see myself drinking blood no  
ways no

Me : and ...and when you had to give  
birth how was it ?

She smiles

Mrs Manzini : it was hell , and I had no  
strength left to push a baby out of me .  
But I was willing , even if it meant me  
dying . But his father pulled out , and he  
said I should be cut opened . That made  
me not lose a lot amount of blood , as  
pushing him out would have

Drink blood , be cut opened . I don't know , I don't think I can do all this

I really don't

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I've never felt even a slight lost like I am feeling right now

I don't know man , I'm in pain . And I  
fucking feel all alone

Like no one gives a damn , it's all just  
about how much damage I've done

What about the pain I'm feeling , fuck at  
the end of the day I'm also human

Maybe I should just leave , and focus on  
doing whatever Ntsika wants me to do  
for him

After all he paid me for it , and in three  
days I'm expecting another payment

I've gone and opened a trust with 70 000  
for my baby girl

And now I don't even know where I  
stand with that , she might not even  
make it

And it shatters me , because I honestly  
don't want to choose between her and  
her mother

I want both of them , I don't want to lose  
anyone between them . But now I'm cast  
aside , I'm on the outside and yeah I feel  
like I've lost them

I get her mother's anger I really do , but  
we need each other right now

I don't know maybe she's concluded she  
doesn't need me , but I know I need her

I know where she's coming from  
through, although a quarrel between us  
shouldn't even last a night

I just feel like the more time we take  
being separated like that

It opens a window of opportunity , for us  
to end up losing each other for real

JJ comes and sits next to me

JJ : you've been out here for a while

Me : I'm leaving

JJ : what ?

Me : I'm going back to Cape Town

JJ : okay wait , what am I missing right now ?

Me : remember that girl ?



JJ : there had been girls , for different things so which one are we talking about?

I take a sigh

Me : the one I killed

JJ : yeah , yeah what about her ?

Me : remember how I killed her , and drank her blood hot ?

His whole facial expression changes

JJ : I just ate , and now you want me to puke

I chuckle

Me : you were there , you saw it all . It'll forever be stuck in your memory

JJ : and it makes me scared of you , because you ripped her throat out . With your fucking hand

Me : okay , okay enough

He shakes his head

JJ : I still don't get though , what does she have to do with this ? I mean you leaving ?

Me : am I stupid or what ?

JJ : certainly not

Me : I drank someone's blood , and I wanted it out . I eat rare meat that's nearly raw

JJ : okay !

Me : how do I think I'm fucking normal  
being like that ?

JJ : don't beat yourself up about this , Bia  
and your little product are going to be  
fine

I doubt , I'm trying to have faith but it's  
not helping at all

Voice : I thought you'll come see her

She mustn't start with me , I get up

Me : she doesn't want me there so

Mom : do you blame her ? She's going through a lot ...

Me : and I'm not , mom I love that girl like nothing on earth . That's our child right there , and I'm affected and hurting as much as she is . Why am I being treated as if I don't hurt ? Well I do , and it wouldn't hurt any of you people to consider me as well in all of that . All everyone sees is how I messed up , how I got us into this mess of a situation . No one cares about me , and if she also wants me away from her then it's fine . I won't go there , beg her and make a fool out of myself

I walk past her

Mom : she's gone home

Me : good for her

That leaves a bitter taste in my mouth ,  
she's gone home

And did not even bother to tell me  
anything , clearly she still can pick up a  
phone and call me

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

I haven't even been able to enjoy being home , but I look so much better

The swelling has gone down , so I'm back to my old self again . Except I look like I'm three months pregnant , going on four

And the baby moves quite a lot , like she's too active . And that always has me tired

But something strange has been happening , and I don't even know how to explain it

I haven't even told my parents , I've been home for two days . Today being the second day

I can feel TJ's emotions , how I also don't know . But I can feel them



And the pain he's in , the hurt and the blame . The loneliness , feeling like everyone has deserted him

I so badly wanted him to come see me , I wanted him to come . But he didn't

And because I was angry , I couldn't bring myself to call him then

Right now , I want to call him . I want to hear his voice , and tell him that I love him . I don't blame him , I was upset . And maybe my reaction was justified , even though unfair on him

When his mother left , we exchanged numbers . And right now I feel like I'm being manipulated

Don't ask how , but the very same way I'm feeling his emotions . And I just want to be back with him

It's the same way I feel like I'm being manipulated , and if his mother agrees

I'm about to lie to my parents , worse lie I've ever said to them before . I'm no Saint , so yes I've lied before . And I will probably still lie some more

I dial her number , and it rings for a bit before she answers

Mrs Manzini : my girl

Please don't call me that , it always sounds better when my boyfriend says it

Okay ex boyfriend

Me : how are you ma ?

Her doing , that I should call her like that. Instead of Mrs Manzini

Mrs Manzini : I should be asking you

Me : that's why I called

Since our last talk , my mind hasn't been at rest . Day and night I'm always thinking

Me : let's just say hypothetically , you and your family can help me with this

Mrs Manzini : help you ?

Me : like the blood drinking and all that ,  
just until I can give birth the same way  
you did

Mrs Manzini : are you saying you want  
to?

I sigh

Me : I've just been thinking about it

Mrs Manzini : okay

Me : problem is , I don't know which  
blood to drink . And I live with people

who are very much clueless about these species , my parents would never allow me to drink blood

Mrs Manzini : I doubt any parent would

Me : but it means I get to live , isn't that what matters ?

Mrs Manzini : yes it is , but like you said . They won't agree

Me : which is why I need your help

Mrs Manzini : anything

Me : can I please come live with your family , just until the baby is born and I'll leave .

She goes quite

Me : I'm sorry to drop all this on you , I just want to give myself and my baby a fighting chance

Mrs Manzini : you don't even need to ask , my home is your home .

Me : so is that a yes ?

She laughs

Mrs Manzini : yes , is that better ?

I smile

Me : so much better

Mrs Manzini : and that is also another thing your parents won't agree to

I know



Me : please assure me that when I get there , all the necessary precautions will be taken . And that blood will be there

Mrs Manzini : I'll make sure of it

Me : thank you , I'll let you know when I can come

Mrs Manzini : okay alright , I'll wait to hear from you . And thank you so much for this , you have no idea how much it means to me . Wanting to fight for you and your baby

Me : I'm thankful for that talk , I just hope I'm strong enough to stomach it

And I really hope so , drinking blood .  
And is it even human blood or what ?

See me opening my thighs for TJ again ,  
kill me .

.

.

.

.

**\*INSERT 13\***

\*Ntsika\*

I walk inside the warehouse and all the guys are here , all except that Oceans boy

I would hate to grow grey hairs because of him , I'm old yes

But 35 ain't that bad , this boy is a fucking rebel . He's good and also bad for me

But I need him badly , he's a good fit .  
More like a perfect one . I need to see  
him once in action

I'll know if I didn't make a mistake with  
him , which I highly doubt

Besides his desperation , the boy has  
great talents . That will do great for me

They shouldn't be wasted , and I'll see to  
it . Unless he proves me wrong

Lwazi : take it down a notch

I just look at him , take my phone out . I  
call him

Voice : I'm here

He says walking in right behind me

Me : what happened to keeping time ?

TJ : I'm here aren't I ?

Lwazi : and he talks back

Me : at your own time ?

TJ : my job is tomorrow , I don't get why I'm here today . Stop changing on your word , and I'll keep your time

The guys cannot believe this , you can see it on their faces

Lwazi is amused , I guess he likes the boy. And maybe slightly impressed by him

No one , and I mean no one can talk back to me . Unless that no one is Lwazi . Only because we're tight and close like that , I won't even bother myself with wanting to correct this Oceans boy

Lwazi : I suggest we get to why we're here

He gets up and gets in between me and TJ

TJ : he wouldn't dare hurt me , next time don't stand in between us like this

Lwazi gets a taste of his own medicine , and all that amusement disappears

Lwazi : wow oh okay

I shake my head , we all walk to the table  
where the blue print is placed

TJ : this is the route ?

I nod

TJ : I see , and who are these people ?

Me : your team , they're here at your  
disposal for whatever you need

He looks at them , and he's about to spit  
nonsense



TJ : I don't do well with teams , just two men will be alright

Me : you don't get to change rules here

TJ : my men , at my disposal

Lwazi chuckles

Me : one of these days , I'll knock you out

He smiles , and it's just fake

TJ : I'll take these two , find something for the rest

Leadership at its best , even against the leader . The boy has got guts and balls

Me : I think I'll leave you to it , just get the job done

The guys give me strange looks , I give Lwazi a nod

Lwazi : guys let's go

We walk out , leaving TJ with his two men

Lwazi : what was that ?

Me : the boy has got it

Lwazi : you've never given anyone reigns like that before

Me : are you questioning me now ?

Lwazi : you know what you're doing so

Me : exactly

We get into the car and he drives off

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

The meeting with the guys didn't even  
take 30 minutes and we were done

They understood what I wanted from them , and they're ready to deliver

Now we wait for tomorrow , and I just wish I wasn't this stressed and worried

But who knows ? Maybe I'll do fucking better , working under pressure

A slight knock at the door , and it's slightly opened .

Mom : can I come in ?

Me : yeah

She walks in

Mom : are you sick ?

She places her hand on my forehead

Me : I never get sick you know that

She sits on the bed smiling

Mom : you're immune to sickness

I sigh

Me : yeah perks of being a beast right ?

Mom : baby....

Me : no don't

She heaves a heavy sigh

Me : I'm sorry

Mom : it's okay , I'm just sorry that I haven't been here for you . I'm sorry that you feel so alone and neglected my child , I failed you and I'm sorry

Anything but my mother's tears , this is my number one woman . Before I marry, so she's not supposed to shed any tears because of me

Me : hey

I sit up and bring her closer , I give her a hug

Me : wipe those tears , let's go down make me something . Maybe bake for me , you know . Just make me happy , and I know you'll be happy as well



She laughs

Mom : I'm still your mother and not your wife

Me : unless my girl takes me back , there won't be any wife here

Mom : I need a daughter in-law , you're my only child . I won't be able to deal

We laugh get off the bed , now it explains why I'm the only child

She couldn't handle having more blood  
sucking beats

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

I've finally gathered that strength to talk  
to my parents

I don't know how much , they're going to bury me now

It just never ends with me , there's always one thing after another

And as of late , it's nothing but just drama . First the pregnancy

Then the baby issue , as well as who it belongs to

My father's enemy , and he didn't come at me with that . But I know he's not happy , he cannot be happy at all

On my way down , I call TJ . I've been meaning to do so since I got home

TJ : hello

Okay that pains me , why is he answering my call like that ?

Me : am I disturbing you ?

The thought of him just being with another girl right now

TJ : no

Me : you said hello

He goes quite and I feel like crying to be honest

Me : please be safe

I drop the call and block him again , it's a lot of work I do . Block and unblock it's just crazy

Mom : someone is up ?

I smile , and it's so forced I sit down

Dad : that's a fake smile

Mom : you feeling better ?

Me : yes mother

Mom : when did you talk to the Oceans  
or who are they , oManzini ?

I laugh , not intentionally

Me : that's not nice mother

Mom : that man is Oceans , the wife and  
son are Manzini

Me : the father is using his adoptive grandfather's surname Oceans , the mother and son are using the biological grandfather's surname Manzini

Mom : those people are dramatic , how do you deal with all of that ?

When you love someone , you deal with their drama

Of course , I would never say that to my parents

Me : I have a request

No one says anything

Me : it's Tyler's birthday in a few days ,  
and I would like be allowed to go

That's not a lie , the only lie is that I'm  
not telling them the truth about why I'm  
going there

Dad : go where ?

Me : to Cape Town

Mom : in your situation ?



Me : yes mother

The look my grandmother gives me , I'm sure she's like "I thought you've broken up"

Mom : I don't think I want you going there

Now what lie will I tell ?

Dad : it's just a birthday , I'm sure he will have many more after this one

Mom : no one will die if you miss it

Me : it might just be my last chance

Nana : don't say such things

Me : we can't ignore what's happening

Nana (grandmother)

I get up

Me : thank you for your time

I walk back to my room , and just break down . This was my only chance . Now I'm sure this baby is just going to definitely kill me

To think I was willing to subject myself to drinking blood

And now that one chance to save myself is shut down

I could never tell my parents the truth , they will never agree to this . I know that for a fact they won't

- .
- .
- .
- .

**\*INSERT 14\***

\*Tyler Jnr\*

It's just how she said "please be safe" it's like she was referring to something in particular and not just saying

But what ? Because it's not like she knows what I'm about to do

And I tried calling back after she  
dropped the call on me , and she's done  
what she does best

Block me

I don't know if this pregnancy is making  
her overreact like this , or she's just  
always been this way

Me : Thingo your phone

We're about to leave for the harbour  
now , he hands it to me

I dial her number , and she doesn't answer . Quite a few times

Okay , this is not even about her thinking I would call her with another number

This doesn't feel right , I doubt she's okay where she is

I give up , and delete her numbers on his phone . One thing I know is that she'll never call it back

Me : thanks

I hand him his phone , he nods . We get into the car and Zweli is the one driving

Me : as soon as the guy gets his diamonds , you two get out of there

Thingo : will it be safe for you , surrounded by vultures like that alone ?

Me : worry not about me

They both nod , and we arrive at the harbour

Zweli : see all these cars ?

Me : that's what happens when you work with people , yet you don't trust each other

They chuckle , we get off the car . I can't believe this is what I've turned to

But I just have to remind myself why , even though now that's threatened

And when I lose both of my girls , that means all this was for nothing

Voice : well I thought Bishop was bringing me a man , and not a...



I turn and face him , my hand goes for his throat . Our men have their guns out. He has about a whole army , and I have two

Me : don't ever come behind me like that ever again , who knows what I'll do when I turn ? I might just rip your throat out

I let go , he coughs it's pathetic

Me : tell your men , to lower those guns. And they pull this stunt again , we'll have a different conversation than this

He's holding his neck , he commands his men with his one hand . They lower their guns

Hades : we started off on a wrong foot

Me : look down on me like that ever again

He raises both his hands up in surrender

Hades : the Bishop never makes a mistakes , my apologies

Me : shall we get to it ?

Hades : of course this way

I follow him inside

Hades : so are you like a mini him ? No one knows your real name , you're just the distributor

Not him too

Me : we're not friends , and definitely not acquainted like that

Hades : understood

He takes a bottle of whisky

Hades : drink ?

I shake my head

Hades : you....you're even worse than he  
is

Me : can we just do what we came here  
to do

Hades : of course

We sit down , I take the diamonds out .

\*Ntsika\*

Lwazi : was it wise for him to go inside alone ?

Me : I believe he knows what he's doing

Lwazi : Thingo and Zweli left

Me : his orders maybe

He shakes his head

Lwazi : this boy is too proud , it could  
either be good or bad

Me : for now it's good

Lwazi : you've taken quite a liking into  
him

I get up and get a beer

Me : he needs the money

Lwazi : that's not what I was talking about

Me : I don't know what you were talking about Lwazi

I sit back down , Hades is still inspecting the diamonds . And so far he's happy

Lwazi : are you grooming him to one day take over from you?

Me : don't be crazy , I just met this boy

Lwazi : and already he has so much power

Me : it's just men , and giving him a position . I don't see where the power is at

Lwazi : if it was anyone else who had talked back to you like that , they wouldn't be breathing right now

Me : I don't need a war with Oceans

He chuckles



Lwazi : we both know that's not it

I sigh

Me : well it's still quite a few years before I make it to 70 and retire , so you can relax about him taking over

We look back at the monitor

Me : Hades won't let him walk out of there

Lwazi : what ?

Me : shit !

I get up

Lwazi : I knew this was a mistake , we should go there

Me : no , he'll feel disrespected

Lwazi : what ! His life surely matters over respect

Me : wait

They get up and shake hands , as soon as TJ is out the door he's in a bullet fight

As if he anticipated this , his gun is already out . And he's firing his way out of the harbour

Lwazi : fuck he's like a mercenary

A whole fucking war hero , if I didn't know better . I would be asking where he trained

Lwazi : I take my words back

He leans on the table

Lwazi : this boy is a fucking pro , taking over a dozen men alone . And with just one gun

I chuckle , as he gets to the car . He suffers a shot

Me : damn

Lwazi : on his arm , it can't be that bad

Me : he needs to come here , so we can take that out

Lwazi : on it

He drives out of the harbour , now we  
have no more sight on him

Just the tracker on his car , that it's still  
moving and coming this way

Me : he did good

Lwazi : outstanding

The Bishop never makes mistakes , and  
with this one I've struck gold . Even with  
his egotistic maniac self

\*Bianca\*

I cried myself to sleep , I don't know how  
to convince my parents anymore

And I'm tired to be honest , like really  
tired . It's always hard having to  
convince them of anything

And this one is hard worse , because I  
can't tell them the truth

I don't want to accept that I'm dying ,  
now that's hard . And at just 17 I don't  
think I want to die

Voice : baby ?

I clear my throat

Me : come in mother

She walks in , and the way I hate how I'm  
stressing her right now . While she's in  
her situation

Mom : how are you ?

Me : I'm okay

Mom : you've been crying

What does one say ? No I haven't , or  
yes I cried myself to sleep . Even right  
now I still feel like I need to cry

Mom : we love you so much

Me : I know

I will never doubt the love my parents  
have for me and my brother's



Mom : and I know , we're hard on you  
half the time

Me : isn't that the job of a parent  
mother ?

She smiles

Mom : true , but I think we just overdo it  
because you're a princess

Me : I understand

She holds my hand

Mom : I don't know what devil are we facing right now , this is not what we usually hear about everyday . We don't know this , and we have no idea what it is . I hate that this has happened to you , you're still a child to be going through so much . I won't lie , I'm very much disappointed . I wasn't expecting you to be bringing me a grandchild , when I'm pregnant myself . But you're my child , I won't kill you for it . We hear about teenage pregnancy all the time , you're not the first nor the last . I just hate how everything is playing out . Everything is just so wrong , this is not how your first pregnancy was supposed to be like . This is scary , and we are living in fear of

loosing you . We're so not for you going to Cape Town , but we'll let you go

I look at her , not believing this

Mom : it's not even about that boy , we're worried about your health . A lot can go wrong , and you're traveling all alone

Me : just a few hours mother , I'm sure I'll be fine

Mom : you've grown now Bianca , going through what you're going through .

Tells me you have grown , and we should  
let you make your own decisions

My mother is shocking me right now , I  
never thought I would hear any of these  
words from her

Me : thank you mother

She smiles

Mom : give me a hug

We hug , and what do you know ?

Both the babies kick , and it feels so strange . But we just laugh it off

.

.

.

.

\*Princess\*

I feel like I'm far away from everyone ,  
my family and Sambulo

Right now the family is just going through a crisis , and I'm not even there to comfort them . But I can't leave right now , there's just too much to do here

And with everything going on back home, makes me wonder if I'll ever get my wedding

Now everyone is just occupied with their own things .

Even Prince , is dealing with his own crises back at the kingdom . I call the one man , I know will make me feel better right now

Dad : my princess

Me : my king

He chuckles , I will forever call him that

Dad : what's wrong ? You don't sound  
okay

Me : I just miss home , and I miss you  
guys

Dad : don't you want to just get away  
from the kingdom a bit?

Me : I wish I could

He sighs

Me : but have you been well ?

Dad : yes

Me : I worry about you

After my mother's passing , he never even looked at finding someone . My father is old yes , but he's that Grandfather that can still lock a slay queen



That's just how good he still looks , and I thought he would want a companion in life

Dad : I'm the father here in case you have forgotten that

We laugh

Me : I will make plans to come see you soon

Dad : I'm really worried about you , because you're really not living . You've taken this life thing , just way too

serious. Forgetting that you still need to live , besides that kingdom and being queen . You still have your life , and it's like you've pushed that at the far back

He has hit a nerve , and now I'm all emotional

Dad : stop this , try and find some sort of a balance . I was once a king too , and that's not your whole life

Me : I'll try

Dad : you do that , and I'll see you soon

Me : definitely

I don't know how am I going to do this ,  
but I'll try .

.

.

.

.

**\*INSERT 15\***

**\*Ntsika\***

He walks in , and strange enough he's slightly bleeding on the arm

Not as bad as I thought he would be , he looks so very much fine

TJ : that's done

Me : excellency so

TJ : so I'm busy dicking and docking bullets

I shrug my shoulders , he chuckles

TJ : my money better not be late

Me : mhm

Lwazi : well let me see that wound

They look at each other

Lwazi : we can't have your family asking questions

He takes his t-shirt off , Lwazi looks at the wound

Lwazi : Strange

Me : what ?

Lwazi : the bullet is ...out

I walk closer and take a look myself , TJ is  
fucking chilled as ever

Me : it's slowly closing and healing

I look at him

Me : what did you apply on this , and  
how did you take the bullet out ?

He sighs

TJ : nothing

He takes his t-shirt and put it back on

TJ : don't ask questions to answers you won't like , until I see you on my next job

He walks out leaving us confused

Lwazi : who is that boy?

Me : my best man so far

I know exactly what he meant

But how do I answer him something I'm trying to figure out myself

.

.

.

.

\*Sambulo\*

My sister has been busy all day today ,  
beats me why go to such lengths



Especially for a daughter of her  
husband's enemy

And I'm sure Tyler doesn't give a damn  
where he is , that this girl is coming here

I came to see my sister today , because I  
want to talk to her

About the whole negotiations , I have no  
family . Basically we have no family

I'm sure by now our biological father ,  
long died . And I doubt he would have  
wanted anything to do with us even now

And my adoptive father , didn't even  
make it to 5 year after his wife passed on

So yeah we're just left all alone , with no  
one but just ourselves

Ledi : what's on your mind ?

Me : what am I going to do ?

Ledi : about what ?

Me : a delegation for the negotiations

Ledi : when is that happening again ?

Me : I promised soon , but with all that's been happening

Ledi : I'm really sorry

Me : it's fine , it's okay . If anything I do understand perfectly

Ledi : well , can't you ask your friends ?

Me : oJay and Crane ?

She laughs

Me : I'm doomed , if only I wasn't asking his sister to marry me . He was my shining weapon

Ledi : you're having it hard

Me : he's against me you know , so he's just going to make things harder for me

Ledi : he will , but don't let him get to you

She's right about that , question is will I be able to do so

Me : I just want this over and done with

Ledi : so you're moving to Botswana after marriage ?

Me : no

The look of shock she gives me

Me : what ?

Ledi : you two are going to manage a marriage , living boarders apart ?

Me : well....

Ledi : what ?

Me : we haven't actually sat down and talked about all of that

Ledi : well I suggest you do , before you get yourselves in another situation . That might not work

One thing I know is that Princess won't want to leave Botswana

That's her home now , she's built a life there for herself

But my home is here in Cape Town , I  
can't just uproot my life and leave for  
another country

Especially with my kids , this is the home  
they know

And I can't leave them behind and move  
to Botswana without them

That would be like choosing a woman  
over my own kids

Yeah this is a tough one

.

\*Bianca\*

So two days later my parents allowed me to leave . Two days left before it's his birthday

I've been here for quite a while , and he's not here . But his cousin is . I just can't bring myself to call him , because my mind has run so wild



And it hurts , I'm basically hurting myself with these thoughts

And while still thinking about him he walks in , almost just passing the sitting area

But he spots me and comes in , the expression on his face is just priceless

TJ : hey

He leans down and gives me a hug , he smells so good . And that's my weakness when it comes to him

TJ knows how to take care of himself ,  
honestly his good looks are just a bonus  
to everything else

TJ : you good ?

I nod , he pulls out and looks at me . Not  
moving too far back

TJ : when did you arrive ?

Me : a few hours ago

TJ : I didn't know you were coming

Me : you didn't want to talk to me when I called

TJ : you blocked me

I smile , he's still blocked even now

Me : you said "hello" to me , get used to it . Every time you annoy me I will block you

TJ : I wasn't with another girl you know , I was going somewhere . It really wasn't a good time to talk

I believe he's telling the truth

TJ : you wanna come with me to my room ?

This is an open plan , his parents are in the kitchen . It's on the far end , but doesn't mean they can't see us here

Me : okay

He takes my hand I get up , and we walk to his room . And it's squeaky clean

Me : you mind ?

He shakes his head , I take my slippers off and get on the bed . He soon gets on the bed as well

He just graces my lips , I don't bother pushing him off . We kiss , even now he still makes me feel things

He takes his jacket off , I notice the bandage on his arm

Me : what happened here ?

TJ : just a bullet wound , nothing major it's healing

Me : a bullet wound ?

TJ : yeah

He says it so calm , like he just didn't say  
a bullet wound

Me : I thought I told you to be safe

He smiles pecking my lips

TJ : what did you know ?

Me : nothing , I don't know why I said  
that

TJ : well don't worry about this

Me : will you tell me what happened ?

TJ : no

Me : what ....

He locks our lips together , and gives me one deep kiss . We kiss for quite a while

TJ : don't ask me any questions about this , when I feel that you're ready I will tell you okay ? Just not now , you might even run away from me

Me : you're speaking like a criminal right now

My voice has gotten so tiny

TJ : okay

Me : you won't even defend that ?

TJ : I won't

He lays on his stomach , and places his hand on my stomach

TJ : how's my baby girl doing ?



Me : good

TJ : she hasn't been troublesome ?

Me : no , but she kicks a lot

TJ : she does doesn't she ?

Me : I'm telling you , always has me tired  
half the time

TJ : she's too active

Me : and strange , making me feel  
strange things . I think she's gifted in a

way , and is able to maybe pass her abilities through me

TJ : listen to you

We laugh

Me : you're not alone , and we're both hurting . And it was wrong of me to push you away like that , I won't shut you out anymore . To be honest I do need you , and I know maybe you need me too . Let's hold each other during this time , your shoulders are broad you know . They carry me just fine , but mine are tiny . But you can always lean on them

He already goes to my shoulder and leans on it

Me : it's because of her I knew how to say that

TJ : thank you , both of you

I place my hand on his chest

TJ : what brings you by this side ?

Me : your mother will be helping me

TJ : with what ?

Me : surviving with the baby

He lifts his head

Me : it's not a normal situation , but if there's a chance . Even the slightest of it, I just have to take it

He nods , but I can tell he's not all for this . Maybe as time goes on , he will be open to it

Me : do you crave ?

TJ : no and I don't drink blood no

Me : oh okay

I don't know why , but that's a relief and to me nor him much

TJ : spend the night in my room

I laugh

Me : I shouldn't even be in here , what will your parents think of me ?

TJ : please

Me : your mother gave me a room

TJ : there's no me in that room

We laugh

TJ : you'll sneak out it the morning

Me : wow really ?

TJ : yeah , and spending the night with me will be worth it

Me : I can't believe you right now

He pecks my lips , and I'll probably be kicked out of here in two days

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I won't lie and say I wasn't happy to see her here , because I am

It was a surprise yes , and one hell of a good one

But bringing her to my bed , I've hurt myself . I've been up for hours

Bia is a touchy person, you cannot be in bed with her and she doesn't touch you

Bia : what's wrong ?

Me : I woke you up ?

Bia : your voice is strained , is your wound in pain ?

Me : something else is in pain

I take her hand and bring it down to my throbbing dick , she gasps as she holds it



Bia : watch porn

Me : I won't do that shit with you here

She smiles

Bia : need my picture ?

I chuckle

Me : no , just let me help myself

I trail my hands down to her thighs

Bia : I'm scared

I look at her

Bia : what if you hurt the baby ? You know this is not a normal pregnancy

Me : I won't penetrate , I'll just rub myself on you until I get off

She's hesitant , but I won't die because of a throbbing dick while she's here

Me : please

Bia : you won't penetrate right ?

Me : right

I say already taking her lips into mine ,  
taking her PJ's off

I move down , part her legs . Get on my  
knees , take my briefs off

She gasps as she lays eyes on my dick

Bia : oh my god

I part her nuna lips with my dick , and  
rub it between her folds

Bia : mhmmm

This is like the tip of the iceberg , and my  
dick longs for her . I find myself fucking  
her clit

And she's moaning now , feeling the  
pleasure . This wasn't even about her

But there's no way I'll cum and she  
doesn't

Bia : oh my god....please

Me : mmmm

Bia : please

She's not

Me : what...oh fuck !

Bia : just the tip in and you'll take it out

Who actually wanted sex between us ,  
now she wants the tip inside

Bia : please

Me : I thought...

Bia : I said just the tip and you'll take it out

She's so desperate it's cute to watch , I lean back and slowly slide my dick inside of her

Bia : ohhhhh yeahhh

And that's not the tip , but it's the whole dick inside

I thrust in slowly , she welcomes me . I  
place both her legs on my shoulders

I feel like my dick is about to burst , I  
take slow strokes not to hurt her

She rubs on her clit with her one hand ,  
and starts moving her waist slowly

Me : fuck !

My dick tightens , she moves back  
adjusting to the size

Me : are you close ?

Bia : mhm

She presses hard on her clit , I pick up my pace . Making sure not to go too deep

She brings her thighs together , biting her lower lip as she cums . And her thighs shake slightly against my chest

A few thrusts in , and I cum . I hold her legs until we both calm down . I pull out , and lay them down on the bed . I move up and give her a kiss . She knows I don't even mind morning breath



She's given up trying not to kiss me in  
the morning

When you want a future with someone ,  
you make up scenarios for yourself

And when you can definitely see it , you  
make it a point that it works out how  
you plan it

I want to know all about her , how she  
looks when she wakes up

How her voice sounds , even the  
morning breath .

Those are things one needs to know ,  
and get used to about their partners

Me : thank you

Bia : shouldn't I have snuck out by now ?

Me : you should have , but you wanted  
the dick inside of you

She moves her eyes shyly away from  
mine , I chuckle

Me : I want to take you somewhere ,  
before you get tired . Maybe for an hour  
or so

Bia : where ?

Me : I won't say , I hope you'll like it

Bia : okay

She snuggles me for a cuddle , and I hug  
her back

.

.

.

\*INSERT 16\*

\*Bianca\*

He brought me to his mother's  
restaurant , I've only been to this one  
like once

I won't even complain , it's just good to  
be out . Getting some fresh air

TJ : I hope you still love this

He places a slice of red velvet cake , and  
the smile on my face

He sits down , and I take a bite not  
wasting any time

Me : not even your whoering ways , will  
make me hate this cake

He sighs

TJ : I'm sorry

Me : TJ were you even safe ?

He raises his brow

Me : since that happened I've slept with you like what 4 times , not even wondering if I'm safe or what

TJ : I was safe

I don't believe that , he hates condoms .  
So how the hell was he safe ?

It just infuriates me , just even thinking about this

TJ : from here , we'll go and I'll get tested . I'm clean though

Me : that's exactly where we're headed

TJ : you don't trust me ?

Me : would you trust yourself ?

He sighs

TJ : you know I'll fix this

Me : I think that's the last thing , we ought to even be thinking about

TJ : that again ?

Me : can we just get through this pregnancy , if possible . Then just maybe I can consider even giving us another chance

TJ : what are we doing right now ?

I smile , because he's getting frustrated .  
I don't know this TJ



Me : doing what you said we should do

He shakes his head

TJ : I still love you

Me : love doesn't fade over night now  
does it ?

TJ : clearly not

Me : do you wish it did ?

TJ : no

Me : you've been with anyone else since this whole thing started ?

He chuckles , I sound like such a jealous girlfriend right now

TJ : no

I just stare at him

TJ : you don't believe me ?

I really do sound and look jealous

TJ : I wouldn't have woken up , with such a boner this morning . If I've been messing around

Me : okay keep it that way , cause I won't be keeping you starved

He laughs

TJ : no kidding

Me : let's respect each other on that , and leave other people outside of this

TJ : okay

Me : bearing in mind that , there shouldn't have even been other people to begin with

He smiles , I finish my cake . And ask for another piece as a take away

We leave going to the doctor , I will not let that slide at all

We'll be having sex here unprotected , while he's sick and has contacted some diseases

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

My mother wakes her up , she was very tired when we came back from the doctor

But I'm glad I'm clean , even though I knew I was safe . As much as I hate condoms

When I mess around , I always have to bare in mind that it's just sex . I don't even have to like it , just as long as I get off then it's fine

But I just had to do it for her , so she knows that I'm clean

Mom : your first feed

That is very much insane , and it's very awkward right now

Mom : I tried making it less uncomfortable

Me : it's still blood

This is very much so disgusting

Bia : it's a cute cup

She's just trying to loosen the mood

Mom : and the straw is not transparent  
as well

Bia : yeah

She takes quite a few minutes

Before she takes a sip . With her eyes closed , and it's one funny look

Me : and ?

She relaxes her face , and the cup is not moving anywhere away from her mouth

Me : hey

I tap her , she opens her eyes smiling

Mom : I guess she likes it

Me : who's blood is it ?



The look of annoyance my mother gives me , but it's only right I ask such things

Bia might be scared to ask , because it's my parents and she's not yet used to them

Bia : wow

Mom : you....finished it ?

She nods

Bia : I think the baby likes it

None of this is comfortable for me , the fact that she's drinking blood . Feeding the baby

Mom : when you get the thirsts do let me know

She takes the cup and walks out

Me : come give me a hug

I wish she didn't have to go through all this

Bia : you know I'm fine

She says laughing as we hug

Me : I hate this

Bia : I know , but surely you want us  
both to live right ?

Me : I do

Bia : then this is how we do it

We pull out and look at each other

Bia : otherwise , she will live and I will  
die

Me : I will fucking hate her

Bia : papi !

Me : no , for real . There's no way I would love a child , that killed you

Bia : our child

Me : still , I just wouldn't . If she lives , then you get to live as well

Bia : then bare with me

Me : wasn't it bad ?

Bia : maybe the first few seconds , but  
after that it just felt normal

Me : you are our super woman , and one  
day I will marry you

She giggles

Bia : whoa !

Me : what ?

She brings my hand to her tummy , and  
that's some hella kicks

Me : are they sure she's a girl ?

We laugh

Bia : I think she's too happy today

Me : you feel that ?

A tear escapes her eye and she nods

Bia : she loves us

I plant a few kisses on her tummy

Me : and we leave her too

Bia : I told you she's strange

And I feel that right now

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

JJ is leaving today , going back to KZN .  
And to be honest , I haven't seen much  
of him . Since I got here

And I hope they haven't been spending  
less time because of me

I know how much these two love each  
other , and they always spend time  
together

They said something about his mother  
not being well , and that's why he's  
leaving



And it's TJ's birthday today , he said he doesn't want a celebration

So we had great breakfast together , and he got his presents from everyone.

Except me , I will give them to him later on . I just didn't want to intrude at his family moment

My phone rings and it's my mother , every chance she gets she's always calling

And I just wish I can tell her the truth , and tell her not to worry I'll be fine

That she should focus on the little Ferrari coming

I answer , because I'm away from everyone

Me : mother

Mom : how are you baby ?

Me : I'm okay

Mom : and you're feeling okay , like there's nothing to worry about ?

Me : no there's nothing at all

Mom : oh I miss you

Me : and I miss you , Nana and dad too

Mom : they miss you too

Me : I know

Mom : oh and Leo called

Me : are they okay ?

I miss my boys so much

Mom : yes , but he says Cero is sick and we need to come back home

We laugh

Me : he's lying

Mom : we all know that , I think they just miss us

Me : maybe you should go home mother

Mom : when are you coming back there?

Eish

Me : I....I'm not sure

Mom : we're not going home without you

Maybe I should be honest , I could be staying here for months and months

And they need to go back home , and take care of those two

Especially now that with Leo , and his lies . My parents need to go back home

Me : can I please tell you something and I ask that you don't tell father ?

Mom : Bianca

Me : please mother

Mom : you want me to lie to your father, what could this thing be ?

Me : there might be a chance that , me and the baby could live . The same way TJ's mother did

Mom : how ?

Me : I.....I have to...uhm drink blood

Mom : no

Me : it's just so the baby doesn't suck on  
mine mother

Mom : that is not acceptable at all

Me : it's the only way we both get to  
live, or else this baby will kill me

Mom : I can't lose you Bianca

Me : then let me do this , and for me to do so . I have to stay here with the Oceans , just until the baby is born

She goes quite , way too quite

Me : mother

Mom : those people did not force you to do this ?

Me : no , I'm actually the one who asked

She sighs



Mom : so you want to ?

Me : for both our sakes yes

Mom : what am I going to tell your father ?

I don't know , she'll figure it all out

Mom : I'll see what I can do , and we'll definitely pass over Cape Town before we leave

Me : thank you mother

Mom : now take care of yourself there  
Sweetheart

Me : I will , and I love you guys so much

Mom : we love you too baby

We hang up , and I'm happy to be  
honest . I guess my mother is not as bad  
as I made her out to be

Assumptions are never a good thing ,  
look how far they got me . Running away  
from home . When I could have just sat  
them down , and been honest

Voice : someone is happy

I turn and look at him

Me : I just spoke to my mother , and they might be going home soon

TJ : what about you ?

He walks towards me

TJ : are they okay with leaving you behind , especially here ?

Me : well I told her the truth

TJ : what ?

I nod

TJ : and what did she say ?

Me : it's our little secret , my father will never know . And she's fine with that , because the baby and I both get to live

He smiles and brushes my tummy

TJ : I love it when things come together

Yeah seems like we will make it just fine,  
his phone beeps he looks at it

And the smile on his face , I really hate  
what's going on right now

I walk away from him , I wonder if I'll  
ever forget about what he did

TJ : hey , it's not any girl

He puts his hands on my shoulders ,  
hugging me from behind

Me : I did not say

TJ : here

He passes his phone in front of me

Me : there's no need

TJ : I know you thought it's a nude photo, or maybe a text inviting me for a fuck but it's not

Me : it's fine , it's not like you owe me anything

TJ : you don't get to just go back on your word , we're with each other . So we keep other people away , so take a look

I sigh and check the message , it's a bank notification . A 100 000 has just been paid into his account

And 70 000 just automatically transferred to a trust , which amounts to a 140 000 already in the trust

TJ : I'm sorry I've made you feel this way, it's all my fault

Me : I'm sorry I always react and make you feel bad , I just can't help it . I guess it'll take time

TJ : I know , and so from now on . I'll just be transparent with you

He kisses the side of my head , I just want us to be okay

- 
- 
- 
- 

**\*INSERT 17\***



\*Tyler Jnr\*

I pretend to be busy on my phone , she's busy stealing glances at me

There's something she wants to say , I don't know why she just doesn't say it. Clearly it's there , and bothering her very much at that

My phone rings , and I wonder how this guy gets to call me every time with a different number

How does he do it ?

Me : yes

Ntsika : you just don't listen do you ?

Me : give it up , I told you I won't call myself that

Ntsika : I'm leaving Cape Town tonight

Me : so ?

Ntsika : there's no way you'll be able to connect me , unless I contact you

Me : we know that

Ntsika : get a check on the attitude

Me : have you on yours ?

He goes quite

Me : exactly , we're so cut from the same cloth

Ntsika : is there anything you want to say ?

Me : no why ?

Ntsika : it'll be quite a while before I contact you again

Me : There's nothing

Ntsika : until next time

He drops the call

Me : what the hell ?

Bia : where did you get that money ?

She's whispering , and I don't get why .  
It's just the two of us

I look around and there's no one , we're  
by the porch

Bia : so ?

Me : huh

I'm so confused right now , I don't even  
know why

Bia : where did you get that money ?

Oh that

Me : I've been doing some side hustles

Bia : crime

Me : that's you saying

Bia : what kind of hustles would give you that kind of money ?

Me : the kind that I do

Bia : crime

I keep quite

Bia : is this how you plan to get your life in order ?

Me : my life is very much so in order

Bia : by doing crime really ? That money in the trust amounts to 140 000

Me : that's money put aside for our baby

Bia : my child will not be raised by blood money

Me : our child

Bia : you're missing the point

She raises her voice , and I don't want her to get angry

Me : you still need to be corrected , you didn't make the baby alone . She's ours not yours , and that's the point . Money is money , it's not marked how one got it. So it doesn't matter



Bia : it matters , and no child of mine will be raised by blood money .

I keep quite

Bia : enjoy that birthday surprise alone

She gets up and walks away , so that's why she's been looking at me the way she has been

It's not like I'm going to stop , just because she doesn't approve . Babies need money , you can't raise a child with love alone

That goes with guys saying , I won't run away I'll take responsibility

Well responsibilities come with money , a baby doesn't eat love

And you saying you'll be there , you'll be there with what ?

We went on to say to everyone we can be responsible , by being parents and making a baby

These little humans are very much expensive , and we can't ignore that fact

So right now , we ought to prove that we can back up our actions

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

I don't know this TJ , I really thought I knew him but clearly I don't

Everyday since I've been here , he shows me another him

He's agitated , gets frustrated by little small things

He always avoids arguments much , like he doesn't want them to go further

He's showing me a side to him I never knew it's there , and he's scary to be honest

Anything that pokes him , to lose his cool. He stays clear of it

Makes one wonder , how he is when he actually loses his cool

A slight knock at the door , and it's him .  
I'm in the room his mother gave me

TJ : I come in peace

Me : stay away from me

He walks in

TJ : I don't want to

He walks closer and leans down ,  
because I'm laying down

TJ : I hate fighting with you

Me : I don't like what you're doing

And it now explains the bullet wound ,  
what will he come back with ? A bullet to  
the head ?

TJ : I saw what you did in there , thank  
you

I'm trying to be upset , but he's making it so hard

TJ : it's beautiful

He plans a soft peck on my lips

TJ : now can we just go back and enjoy what you did

Me : no

TJ : my girl...

I smile

Me : that won't get you anywhere

TJ : okay well , let's just go to our room  
then

Me : it's your room , not ours

He chuckles

TJ : come on , what happened to us  
sharing ?

Me : just because we're sleeping  
together doesn't mean....



TJ : we make love

Me : what ?

I ask frowning

TJ : we make love , we don't sleep  
together

Me : one and the same thing

TJ : no

Me : well it doesn't matter , go enjoy  
yourself and leave me alone

TJ : come on

Me : no ! We're expecting a baby , and you're busy involving yourself in dangerous things . You want me to be a single parent , and what do you want me to tell your daughter ? One day your father came home , with 7 bullets to his chest

TJ : it won't get to that

Me : stop whatever it is that you're doing

TJ : come with me

Me : TJ !

He sighs

TJ : look I hear what you're saying okay ,  
I just want us to go and end what you  
started

He keeps pecking my lips , I end up  
laughing

Me : just so you know , I'm not playing  
with you

TJ : we're not even dating , according to you . But you're acting like a small wife right now

Small wife ?

Me : I'm your baby mama , that means I always get the first say when it comes to you

He smiles so seductive

TJ : I love it when you call yourself that

Me : well it's not a self proclaimed title

TJ : no , it's fucking damn hard earned ,  
and baby mama's spend baby daddies  
birthdays with them

I laugh

Me : is that so ?

TJ : yes , and you took your energy and  
did all that for me

He holds his hand out

TJ : please

I hate it when he's being so cute ,  
because I just can't help but give in

And it makes me weak , like I can never  
refuse TJ . And I hate that

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Hillcrest\*

The queen has spoken with the king ,  
and the two are getting ready to leave  
for Italy

Of course passing through Cape Town ,  
to see their princess

The king still doesn't get , how the  
queen just agreed to leave the princess  
behind

He has become suspicious , and the  
queen can see that . And this also eats  
her up

The fact that she's lying , or rather  
keeping something from her husband

Especially something this big about their  
daughter , but she can see the  
relationship growing

She doesn't want it end , but to become  
even more than what it is now

She loves her daughter , and she can  
admit that maybe her patenting skills

Are what makes the princess feel like  
she can't be free and honest with her



And now she wants that to change , her daughter has opened that channel for her

And she doesn't want to lose it , even if it means keeping their secret from the king

After all in the end everyone will win , their daughter gets to live

And also their granddaughter , and she doesn't want either of them losing their lives

King Ciro : again why are we leaving her?

He's leaning by the door frame and watching her pack

The two have been staying in a hotel , only because the king didn't agree to live at his mother's in-law

Queen Mbali : I think she's happy there

King Ciro : she's pregnant with....

Queen Mbali : I know all that , but uprooting her also won't help us . If

she's okay , let's leave her . And when she's ready she'll come back home

She walks to him

Queen Mbali : I don't like this as much as you don't , but we can't deny the relation the two kids have created between the families

King Ciro : don't go there

He hates the Oceans even today , he doesn't even know how to hide it

The queen smiles

King Ciro : it's not amusing

She shakes her head , and they end up  
just laughing

King Ciro : at least we'll get to see her

Queen Mbali : yes , and remember we  
didn't come here to get her

King Ciro : but it's the situation

Queen Mbali : please let's just leave it as it is , until it needs us again

He sighs

Queen Mbali : I love you

King Ciro : I love you

They kiss briefly , and share one laugh as the baby kicks

Queen Mbali : now let's go , I miss my little men

The king grabs their bags , while she  
takes her small bag and they leave

.

.

.

.

\*Sambulo\*

I've brought the girls to see their aunt ,  
they haven't been themselves as of late

And I know its because they haven't see her , both their mothers are not involved in their lives

So she's the only female figure they know , as much as we have no family. They also don't , we're just each other's family . And her family as well

Ledi : you're starring at her

She stands next to me

Me : are you sure the baby is not normal?

Ledi : what ?

Me : I mean look at her , does she look  
she's carrying a half beast inside of her ?

She smiles

Ledi : you're right

Me : about ?

Ledi : there's just something strange  
about her baby , that I just don't get

Me : she's not like TJ



She shakes her head

Ledi : no she's not

This girl doesn't even look she was hospitalized , she looks very fine

If you don't know her months , yes you'll think she's far

But that's the only strange thing about this , nothing else

Ledi : who knows , maybe this baby is the answer to my tears prayers

Me : what ?

She pats my shoulder

Ledi : it is also said that tears are prayers  
right ?

I nod

Ledi : well maybe this baby , is the  
answered prayers

Me : you're loosing me

She laughs

Ledi : stop starrng come with me , you'll  
make her uncomfotable

Me : she doesn't even see me

Ledi : a person presence is always felt ,  
she can feel you

We turn and walk to the kitchen

Me : so you won't answer me

Ledi : I did

Me : what did you mean by that ?

She takes out juice and two glasses

Ledi : have you talked with Princess ?

Me : changing the subject

She shrugs

Me : no , not yet

Ledi : you should soon, because I think  
you should send that letter

Me : right now ?

She nods

Ledi : why wait ? Tyler agreed , don't give him reason to go back on his word

Me : and he's very much capable

Me : yeah you're right

I guess it's time for the big elephant talk,  
I wonder we'll resolve this one

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 18\*

\*Princess\*

Sambulo is suddenly coming back , and there had been no talks about that

And I don't know , maybe it's just me or what . But I don't have the greatest feeling with him coming back

I miss him yes , and obviously it's great that he's coming back of course

But there's just something , that's kind of making me nervous

For what , or why ? I don't know . I just can't shake off this feeling

I tried asking him , if all is well . But he's just not being forth coming

I decided not to push , so I'll hear from him when he gets here

I've been meaning to talk to my brother in a while now

And maybe my father was right , I do need to go back home . Even for just a week it's fine

I take my phone and call my brother

Prince : hello

Me : it's been a minute



He chuckles

Prince : you've deserted us , what can we say

Me : that's not nice , you're king yourself. And you know how it goes

He sighs

Me : what's wrong ?

Prince : you know I'm tired of this

Me : "this" being what Prince ?

Prince : this life , the throne the kingdom  
like all of it . I'm tired

I don't like what I'm hearing right now

Me : wait....what's happening ?

Prince : nothing is happening , I'm just  
tired

Me : and something drove you to be  
tired

He sighs , and now I'm worried about  
him . Very much so worried

Me : where is Lera ?

Prince : you know I don't need my wife to baby me , so don't even go there just leave it

He says with a chuckle

Me : I can't help myself

Prince : worry not she's fine , and this was just me having a conversation with my twin sister

Me : I really need to come back home

Prince : because you want to , and  
because you have to . Don't make it  
about me , even as King I'm allowed to  
be overwhelmed

Me : I did not say....

Prince : it's okay right ?

Something is wrong with my brother

Me : yes

Prince : I love you , always know that

Me : that feels like a goodbye

He chuckles , and it's not easing me at all

Prince : now this is a goodbye , let's talk  
again soon

He drops the call , and I'm just left  
rattled by our conversation

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

It's almost midday and she hasn't gotten up , I don't even want to leave her sight

Incase something is wrong , I can't afford to take any chances with her

Although she looks fine to me , but she could be in an inner battle

I get on the bed , and hug her from behind . Rubbing my one hand on he tummy

Me : hey

Bia : hi

I kiss her cheek

Me : are you okay?

Bia : mhm

She would tell me if something is wrong right ? I mean she knows the delegacy of her situation

Me : and is she okay ?

Bia : I think so

She places her hand over mine

Bia : she hasn't kicked today , so I'm a bit worried

Are these kicks supposed to be important ?

Me : like nothing at all ?

Bia : she's too quite

Me : maybe she's lazy like you today

She smiles



Bia : I'm tired , your cousin's wore me out yesterday

Me : those two are too hyperactive

Bia : I need my own hyperactive to be active right now , maybe I'll be okay

Me : let me help you

I turn her to lay on her back

Bia : I'm not having sex with you , in your parents house again . It just feels so

weird , especially with your parents  
around

Me : o-kay !

She holds both my hands

Me : even last night we were having sex ,  
so what's stopping us now ? Your  
sudden conscious , it won't work . Just as  
long as you still can , we'll have sex here.  
And right now that's not even what I was  
going to say

Bia : oh

I chuckle with a smile

Me : you sound pleased

She laughs

Bia : please leave me alone

I pull her top up , revealing her tummy  
all out

Me : let's see if people are still asleep by  
this time

I lay my head on her tummy , and rub the side with both my hands

Me : hey...it's long passed morning now . Are you still okay in there huh ? You haven't even eaten anything today , so are you not hungry or thirsty maybe . Mommy is worried about you , and we shouldn't worry her now . You know that's our queen right , please come and greet her . And then you can go back to your laziness it's fine like....

And the kick that comes , my fucking eye feels it . And I'm helping her here , she laughs at me

Me : really ?

Bia : sorry

But she's still laughing

Me : see me trying to help you again , kill me

Bia : you woke her up

Me : were you not worried a few minutes ago ?

Bia : I was but yeah....she's awake now  
and maybe hungry

Me : that's no way to greet your father

She laughs , and it's crazy how one can  
see these kicks from outside . Like yeah  
women go through the most , I wouldn't  
survive being kicked like this

Bia : thank you daddy , at least I know  
now she's still okay and breathing

Anything for my girl and my baby girl

.

\*Camps Bay CPT\*

Tyler walks in their room his wife is taking a nap

It's during the day , which is so unlike her to just doze her

Unless she's sick , but she was fine all morning . He thinks to himself

Tyler : sweetheart is everything okay ?

She still just can't get over how he still calls her sweetheart , all these years

To this day , and it still feels like the very first time he uttered those words

Ledi : I think I'm coming down with a cold

Tyler : need the doctor ?

Ledi : it will pass you know



He walks closer to the bed , and gives her a kiss on the cheek

Tyler : I'm in love with you , you know that

She smiles

Ledi : and I'm in love with you

It still feels like the very first time , his phone rings and it's his father

Tyler : it's my father

He sits right next to her and answers his call

Tyler : dad

Africa : how are you ?

Tyler : trying

Africa : still dealing with the whole situation of TJ ?

Tyler : yes , but I think we're coming right about it

Africa : that's good

Tyler : you sound bothered

Africa : I had a talk with your brother

Tyler sighs , Prince has always been a rebel . There were times where he got his act together , but it never lasted

Tyler : about ?

Africa : the throne

Tyler : what about it ?

Africa : he wants to step down

Tyler : what ?

This comes as a shock to him , he never saw it coming . He did not even anticipate for it

Africa : yeah

Tyler : what is wrong with that son of yours ?

Africa : it's because now , he and his wife have no kids . So there's no lineage of his , that will rule after him

Tyler : the very same throne you killed , and spilled blood for . He wants to expose it to vultures today ?

He's getting angry right now

Africa : he doesn't even want to wait until his time , he just wants to step down right away

Tyler : does his sister know about this ?

Africa : I doubt

Tyler : and what is the wife saying ?

Africa : I wouldn't know now

Tyler : I'll be there tomorrow

Africa : wait...you're dealing with a crisis yourself

Tyler : this is pressing and important ,  
Prince is just being stupid right now . If  
it's not Princess willing to lose  
everything , just for a man . It's her

brother , leaving the throne just because he doesn't have kids

They both sigh , and Ledi can see and feel the intensity of this conversation. She tells herself that she won't get involved , even though they're dealing with the baby issue

This sounds very serious , the throne cannot be exposed

Africa : see you tomorrow then , and don't come here with intentions to killing him

They both laugh dropping the call , as soon as it's dropped

Tyler's expression changes back again

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 19\*



\*Sambulo\*

I'm on call with Princess , and she  
doesn't sound well

I don't know if it's because I told her , in  
a few days I'm going there or what

Maybe it's something else bothering her,  
or its what I said

I was rather vague about it , and did not tell her why exactly I'm coming

Princess : how are the girls ?

Me : good

Princess : even knowing you're leaving them again ?

Me : oh that , I haven't told them

Princess : oh

Me : but I will , Thuto is coming down with fever . She's a bit sulky right now

Princess : and you think it's a good time to come ?

Me : we have things to talk about , and discuss . I'm ready to send the letter to your brother

She goes quite , and she's seriously just worrying me right now

I hope she hasn't changed her mind about us now getting married

Me : what's wrong ?

Princess : what ?

Me : I asked a question , you can't be asking me another

She sighs

Princess : what do you mean what's wrong ?

Me : like with you , you don't sound okay at all

Princess : are they okay back home ?

Me : considering everything happening

Princess : okay

Me : need I be worried now ?

Princess : about ?

I feel like this is not getting us anywhere,  
me asking her and she asks me back

Me : will you just tell me what's  
bothering you ?

The silence again , I can't take this

Me : do you still want to get married ?

Princess : what kind of question is that ?  
Of course I still want to get married to  
you , without a doubt

Me : right , I guess I'll wait until you're  
ready to tell me what's bothering you

Princess : babe.....

Me : I love you okay , take care of  
yourself

Princess : I'm...

I drop the call , it's no use trying to get her to talk when she sounds like she doesn't want to

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Tyler Jnr\*

Without a doubt , my girl will be the best  
mother ever

I've been watching her playing with the  
girls , and she's a natural at this

And they're so taken by her , they've  
even forgotten their aunt

And didn't even want to leave her sight ,  
I'm not surprised they're back again  
today

She looks at me , and finds me staring at  
her smiling . She smiles right back



Bia : what ?

Me : I love the view

She laughs

Me : can't wait for our baby girl to get here

Bia : having baby fever

Me : she's already on the way so

She shakes her head

Me : see why I need to make money , so  
you two can have girls dates and all

The look she gives me

Me : okay I've done it

Bia : stop with that thing of yours papi , I  
was not playing

One day she'll see reason

Me : I....

My parents come down , and my father  
has on a bag like he's leaving

Mom : tell me when you get there

He kisses her forehead , and says  
goodbye to the girls and he's gone

Not like I expected a goodbye , he was  
just never going to . And I find affection  
between sons and father's awkward

More especially at my age , just doesn't  
work for me at all

Me : what's going on ?

Mom : he's going home

Me : to Manzini ?

Mom : yeah

She sits down , next to the ladies

Me : why , is uBaba okay ?

I call my grandfather baba , I don't know why I just do

Mom : he's fine don't worry yourself about it

I don't wanna believe her right now , but I can't call her a liar as well

Mom : baby when are your parents arriving , you said today right ?

Bia : they'll probably be here in a few hours

I love the relationship between these two , it's the most important relationship a man needs

His mother and partner getting along  
just fine , soon she'll be my wife

And the mother in-law and daughter in-  
law drama , is the last thing I need

My phone rings , and funny enough it's  
Ntsika . I hope I have no other job . I  
walk away from everyone and answer it

Ntsika : before you even say anything , I  
need you here

Isn't he supposed to be a in Joburg ? And  
he's just saying

Because he doesn't want to hear me not calling myself a distributor

Me : why ?

Ntsika : I have a job for you , why else would I be needing you to come here

Me : must I come there ? I'm dealing right now , and hell I have exams coming up

Ntsika : what ?

As if he doesn't believe what I've just said

Me : what do you mean what ?

Ntsika : boy what exams are you talking about ?

This man !

Me : school exams , what other exams are there ?

He sighs



Me : I am not scared of education , I'm a whole freaking lawyer to be

Ntsika : you'll come in handy one day

And just like that the call is dropped ,  
and it'll be useless to call back

The number doesn't exist anymore , that  
much I already know

I hope I did not just loose another 100K ,  
fuck exams could wait dude was gonna  
make a plan

I walk back inside , and Bia is no longer with them

Me : where uhm... where is Bianca

Mom : gone to pack

Me : what ?

Mom : her parents called , they're already here so they're coming to fetch her

Me : fetch her ? Fetch her for what , I thought she's not leaving

I don't even wait for her to answer back ,  
I go to my room and she's not in

I go to the one my mother gave her , and  
indeed she's packing

It's funny how she doesn't use this  
room, but her clothes are in here

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Bianca\*

Me : will you come in , don't just stand behind me like that you're heavy

TJ : where are you going ?

Me : to see my parents

TJ : yeah but , why are you packing ? And aren't they supposed to be coming here

TJ is a man in full blast drama

Me : I'll be spending the night with them at the hotel

I turn and look at him , can't he see I'm packing an overnight bag

TJ : oh that , and then you'll be back tomorrow right ?

Wow , he's all in on drama not even an inch left out

Me : yes

TJ : oh okay

He walks in , and now he's the one who finishes up the packing

I end up laughing , he was just being unnecessary though

TJ : don't laugh , that was hella scary

No it wasn't

Me : you clearly didn't think that my parents were going to sleep here now were you ?

He just looks at me

Me : I can always call and say that you'll bring me , instead of them coming to fetch me

TJ : then do it , why haven't you already?

See what I meant ? I wonder how we'll separate when I have to leave

I won't definitely be staying here forever, he needs to kinda get that into his head

Unless he wants to have a mental illness of some sort

\*INSERT 20\*

\*Princess\*

I've been calling Sambulo , since  
yesterday . And he's not taking my calls



I know I messed up , I should have given him the same energy he was trying to give me yesterday when he called

It was wrong of me , not to tell him what's bothering me

Now I've booked a flight back home , I just want to be with my father and brother

I can tell something isn't right , and it's not helping that it has come at this time in my life

I call Sambulo again , and still it's the same thing . Worse now it's just taking me to voicemail

Me : babe I'm sorry about yesterday , how I spoke with you . Please get back to me when you can , we need to talk . I'm just stressed by a conversation I had with Prince , a few days ago . It has nothing to do with us , I'm sorry I even gave you doubts my love . I'm going home , so please stay home and take care of Thuto . I'll make sure to pass through Cape Town , when I come back this side . And Mr Moloji , ke ya o rata (I love you)

I say with a smile , like he can see me .  
Because I really do love this man

.

.

.

.

\*Sambulo\*

I woke up to her message this morning ,  
and I so badly wanted to hear her voice

I tried calling , but it didn't go through .  
So I guess she's already headed to KZN

But I left her a message , and just so she  
knows that I love her as well

I've already written the letter , and my  
sister suggested it's best I send it now

While Tyler is in KZN , and with his father  
and brother

So I'll be sending it later on , I don't see  
why we should wait as well

Especially because now , I know my woman is still for us and still wants us to get married

Ledi : hey

She doesn't sound good herself , and she sits down

Me : you should go get checked as well

I'm at the doctor's , I had to bring Thuto in . She was like very bad this morning

Ledi : I'll be fine , how is she ?

Me : I'm still waiting on the doctor

Ledi : I hope it's just flu and it'll pass

Me : get checked , you two were in each other's space for a period of two days .  
You could have given it to each other

Ledi : fine , but let's hear how she is first

She's just being stubborn , she also has  
some sort of a fever

- 
- 
-

\*Bianca\*

Having breakfast with my parents was just hard

Last night we spent half the night , just talking and nothing else . It made me happy , just how they seemed to be so invested in knowing about the progress of the baby

But now it's sad , because they're leaving . And I know I'll be without anyone here

Just knowing , they were just in KZN was better . Now Nana is all that's left

And I don't want to stress my grandmother , like she doesn't need any of it

Right now , I just hope I can rely on TJ and his mother

Mom : take care of yourself baby



Me : I will mother

TJ is already waiting for me , just a bit further from us

Dad : you call if there's anything , anything at all

Mom : even when there's nothing , just call and we'll always call always

Me : I will , I promise

I pull out of the hug with my mother

Mom : and take care of this one as well

I smile

Me : I will , she better take care of me  
too

Mom : I have no doubt she will

I nod

Dad : come

He holds his hand out I take it

Mom : don't go causing problems with that boy

He just shakes his head , I laugh because I also don't want him causing problems

They're leaving me to stay with these people , and I need TJ in my corner

We get to him , and I can't even comprehend his look

Dad : Oceans

He's using Manzini , I've been saying and I've given up . To my father they're just Oceans , and he hates them

TJ : king Ferrari

Dad : you take care of my daughter , and my granddaughter . You make sure I lose either of them while in your care , or I'll lose myself on you whole lot . She better not call me crying , not even for a second. And it's because of you , or anyone in that family of yours . Now she's carrying your baby , I can't take that back even though I so damn wish .

And that means I get to spare you right now , don't make regret it

TJ : I totally understand

And this one has got it all covered , keeping it short and simple

Dad : daddy loves you , you be well

Me : I love you too my king

We hug , and it's a bitter sweet moment when we pull out and they leave

TJ : it's okay I'm still here

He engulfs me into his arms , I can't help but cry . I'm already crying

TJ : your father is so going to kill me , did you hear that man ? Damn !

I laugh pulling out

TJ : it's okay

He wipes my tears off , I know he was just trying to cheer me up

TJ : can you tell me you love me too

Me : for what ?

He takes my hand and we walk out

TJ : you told another man you love him ,  
in front of me

He did not , I burst out laughing that  
even his baby fights me

Me : that's my father

TJ : he's still a man

Me : Tyler Junior Manzini Oceans  
whoever you are I give up on you

We get to the car , but he still doesn't let  
go of my hand

TJ : please

Me : I love you

He looks at me and smiles

TJ : please kiss me

Me : you're just pushing it right now



TJ : just a peck

I move closer , and the second my lips touch his . He deeps it , it awakens things inside of me

A few minutes kissing , his hand trails down to my thighs . And I'm wearing a dress

He slides his between them , and I part them further . The second his fingers touch on my panty he deep grains

TJ : fuck

He slowly pulls out of the kiss

TJ : I still do this to you ?

He's just making me embarrassed , I'm weak at his touch so what ?

TJ : see we're for life , that's me and you

I shake my head , he's just proven a point that we're in a non existent break up

.

.

.

\*Manzini kingdom\*

Tyler walks in his father's chamber , he didn't get to see him yesterday when he arrived

Tyler : father

Africa : do sit down

He take a sit , his father is standing by the window looking outside

Tyler : how have you been Manzini ?

He chuckles

Africa : funny how you can call me that , yet you still be using my surname

They both laugh

Tyler : I just prefer Oceans over Manzini , but trust me I know my roots

Africa : mhm

Tyler : which is more than I can say for  
your son

Africa sighs and turns looking at Tyler

Africa : I don't want you two going at  
each other , that shitty taboo nonsense  
will not happen . Not with my blood line,  
we may be fucking killers yes . But we  
don't kill one of our own

Tyler sighs

Africa : Prince just needs an ear ,  
someone to listen and understand  
where he's coming from . Fuck yes he's  
acting impulsive right now , but a  
solution is what we need . Not a war son

His father's words get to him , and he  
knows now he has to step up and take  
the lead

He ran away from the throne , those 19  
years ago . And now it's facing him

Tyler : I hear you

Africa : one thing we cannot do is loose this throne , this Kingdom belongs to oManzini . And my parents blood was spilled for it , their lives were taken and cut short . I fought for it , I took it back by the council blood . And I will not lose it , not by my own sons spilling each other's blood . Even in my grave I will turn , don't even fucking think about it

Tyler can still see a whole himself and his son , in his father

This is who they took after , so Prince is different . Doesn't make it any less of their own

Tyler : I'll talk to him , I promise

Africa nods

Tyler : is it possible , I know I'm a half blue blood . Worse I don't know what that makes my son , but can my lineage sit on the throne ?

His father smiles

Africa : now....now you're speaking like a true Oceans . oManzini and Batlokoa must be proud wherever they are , if it



means TJ must sit on that throne just so  
we keep it so be it

Now Tyler has a task ahead of him

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*INSERT 21\*

\*Princess\*

It's a surprise finding my brother at home , I wasn't expecting to find him here

I wonder why he's here , and it's a bit worrying for me to be honest

The questions I'm asking myself , is he here because of my wedding or what ?

Tyler has the power to tell my father , to hell with the stupid wedding . And my father won't even question him

That's just how powerful , and highly regarded my brother is here at home

His word is law , and it goes . And everyone else follows

Dad : good to have all my kids home

I smile , I can see the tension between the two . Now I'm wondering what happened before I got here

Me : it's good to be home , I think I needed this more than anything

Azania : will you ever come back to stay  
this side ?

Me : no Nia , I can't leave the Kingdom  
my love

She nods , but you can tell she's not  
really that happy

Me : how about you visit me when  
schools close ?

Azania : I'm going to Cape Town

Okay that hurts , it shouldn't I know . But I feel as though like she loves Tyler more than me

And obviously she's more closer to Prince , because they live together. We're sisters though , shouldn't we be bonding over that ?

Me : even for a week or maybe a few days ?

Azania : I don't think so

I can't even convince her I see

Azania : father may I please be excused ?

He nods , she gets up and kiss his cheek  
and walks away

Me : wow

Tyler : she's still a child don't take her to  
heart

Easy for him to say

Me : is it my fault that o was shipped  
away when she was a baby , that she  
grew up without me ?

Dad : Princess !

Me : no dad , Azania doesn't like me .  
How many times has she gone to Cape  
Town ? And she's only come to  
Botswana like once , only once

Prince : don't over exaggerate

Me : wow , so you're all going to pretend  
like you didn't just hear how cold she  
was towards me ?

Tyler : all she said was that she's going to  
Cape Town

Me : after I asked her so nicely to visit me

They go quite

Me : I can't come back and live here , that's not allowed right ? So how do I manage a kingdom all the way in Botswana, and still try to make her a part of my life if she doesn't want to ? I can't come back home

Dad : we get that , now leave this issue



Me : mother would be so disappointed  
at her kids

That sets my father on the wrong side

Dad : so what the hell do you want us to  
do ? Force her to come visit you ? She's  
old enough to say her mind , stomach it  
or leave her alone . And before you even  
go utter things about my wife , what  
would she be saying about you . Just  
because we're quite doesn't mean , I  
agree with this . But because you're my  
daughter , and I want to see you happy .  
I won't stand in your way , you were

slowly turning into a rebel because of that boy . A whole damn queen , and now you want to judge a child over not visiting you . You're the adult here , if you so damn want that relationship with her initiate it

He gets up , I've never heard him speak to me like that

Me : father I'm sorry I...

He walks away , tears stream down my face

Prince : you just had to mention mother didn't you ?

Why is he rubbing the salt in the wound?

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*Manzini kingdom\*

Tyler is on the phone with his wife , he's very worried about her

He hasn't even been able to talk with Prince , which is why he came home

Tyler : I hate that I'm not there with you sweetheart

Ledi : don't worry , it's just a cold and it'll pass

Tyler : go see the doctor again

She laughs

Ledi : I just went there yesterday , Sambulo forced me

Tyler : was it a good doctor ?

Ledi : yes

Tyler : if you're not well soon , I'm coming back

Ledi : what about what's going on there?

Tyler : they can see it themselves , Princess is here and well Africa is not happy with her

Ledi : why ?

Tyler : you don't need to hear all this  
shit, but yeah things are just happening  
here

Ledi : which is why you need to be there

Tyler : you know I only care about you ,  
and nothing else

She laughs

Ledi : don't be too hasty

Tyler : get well and I might just think  
about it

Ledi : I'll be fine TJ is taking care of me

Tyler : with you not well he will have his hands full

Ledi : worry not , we'll make it just fine

Tyler : okay

His heart is no longer here , but he wants to be with his wife right now

.

.

.

.

\*Sambulo\*

Receiving a call from Princess , crying the way she is crying

And she hasn't even been able to utter a single word

Now I wish I was at KZN with her , she's not okay at all



Me : please calm down and talk to me

Princess : I'm sorry

Me : okay calm down , take a glass of water . And let's talk

Princess : give me a minute

Sounds like she's putting the phone down , after a while she takes it back

Princess : my father is angry at me

That's new

Me : why ?

Princess : I asked Azania to visit me , and she said no she's going to Cape Town

Me : that's what the fight was about ?

I'm a bit confused

Princess : I just went off about how she doesn't like me , and how mother would be disappointed with us

Me : ah

Princess : I didn't mean to upset him , I really didn't . And now I've learnt that he doesn't even approve of this marriage

Me : what ?

Princess : I'm really scared now

Me : what do you mean he doesn't approve ?

Princess : he told me so himself , and said he's only not saying anything because he wants me happy . And I was

becoming a rebel because I want to  
marry you

This can't be good at all , like it cannot

Me : maybe we should hold on this

Princess : what....but

Me : I ...I need to go check on Thuto let's  
talk later

I drop the call , I'm not angry at her or  
anything . It's just evident her family will  
never approve of us

I really don't see why I should force this ,  
already she's being labelled as a rebel all  
because of me

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 22\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I walk into my parents bedroom , my mother is in bed

I hope she's not sleeping , she hasn't eaten all morning and it's almost midday now

I can't have her , not eating . While she's sick . She has to eat

Me : Mom

At least she's not asleep , she turns and faces me

I put the tray on the night stand

Me : I brought you food

Mom : aren't you supposed to be at  
Campus ?

Me : supposed to be

She sits up

Mom : so what are you doing here ?

Me : with you sick , Bia is a my  
responsibility . She can't be left alone

Mom : no TJ you can't be missing school,  
I'll take care of Bianca

Me : you're sick yourself

Mom : it's just a cold , I've had enough  
of your father being on my case and  
exaggerating . Please don't join him

I'm surprised he's not here

Me : okay but her pregnancy is fragile ,  
we really can't take risks with it . She  
might even contract your flu , who



knows . And what if she gets much worse sick ?

Mom : fine , but I hate that you're missing school

Me : I'll catch up

She nods

Mom : thanks for the food

Me : take your meds when you're done

Mom : I will

I walk out

.

.

.

.

\*Tuscan Kingdom\*

The twins are so happy that the parents are back home , but they're a bit sad that their sister isn't back

But the parents are doing their best to make them happy

And it seems to be working , as there hasn't been any "where is Bia questions" today

The king is on call with one of his men back in South Africa , from the cartel that he took from Tyler Oceans

King Ciro : I need eyes on my daughter , day and night . Everything and anything that happens there , I need to hear all about it

Kane : Understood

King Ciro : I don't care that she's under  
Oceans care right now

Kane : I assure you , we won't loose sight  
of her

The queen walks in and he drops the call

Queen Mbali : who was that ?

King Ciro : no one important

Queen Mbali : a man is never up to any good , once he starts saying that

King Ciro : I was talking to a man , and not a woman

Queen Mbali : I did not accuse you of cheating as well

King Ciro : then there's absolutely nothing dangerous about what I said

He just doesn't want show to her , that he's suspicious of her agreeing that they leave Bianca behind

He believes there's more to this , and he intends to find out

But his wife cannot know that he doesn't believe her reasoning

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Princess\*

I've never been this stressed in my entire life . I feel like it was a mistake now coming back home

No one is saying anything to me , paying any attention to me

I feel like I really offended them , like everyone . And it doesn't help that I have no one to talk to

I don't want to bother Ledi much , I'm sure her husband has already told her what happened

And maybe she already faults me as well, I know I was wrong too . I can admit that much

I can't even call Sambulo , I think he's angry at me

Or maybe he doesn't even want anything to do with me anymore

I'm always bringing drama , and I'm sure he's tired of that

Azania walks in , and she just greets and passes . I follow her to the kitchen



Me : can we please talk Nia

She nods

Me : I'm sorry about what happened

Azania : it's okay , I didn't mean to offend you anyways . And I heard what you said , for what it's worth . I don't hate you

Me : maybe hate was strong word to use, maybe you just don't like me

She sighs

Me : I'm sorry

Azania : I'm just not used to you that's all , all these things are just not there

Me : can we please just try please

Azania : how ? I'm sure in a few days you'll be fine , then what ? You're always not available on the phone half the time, once you're back to Botswana you're back to your busy life again . I don't see how we can have a relation , beyond the none existent one we have

Okay that sure hurts to be honest

Azania : I love you none the less , you're my sister after all . Relationship or not , that I cannot change

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

The princess is not happy today , like  
she's not happy at all

She's been kicking since all morning ,  
and I'm so tired right now . It's even just  
a hassle to get up

Strange enough , she's refusing the  
blood

I drank it twice today , and both times I  
vomited it . Doesn't make sense at all

I'm so scared , like now what's wrong ?  
Why is she suddenly not loving the blood

Maybe it's not human , and she wants human blood

Now I'm scared and worried for my life , because then if that's the case . She's definitely going to be sucking on my blood . And I'm dead , so not ready for that . But there's no avoiding it

TJ : hey

He sits next to me , I'm in bed . I tried getting up . But I strained myself so I decided to just stay in bed

TJ : you're heating up so bad

Me : I'm even sweating

TJ : any pains ?

Me : just the kicks

TJ : I hate this , you should be going to see a doctor right now

Me : you know I can't

TJ : I know

He's taking strain right now

TJ : can you stomach anything at least ?

Food

Me : I don't know , I can't take any more  
throwing up today

He sighs

TJ : I hate this

Me : I want to sleep for a while , don't  
leave my sight

TJ : let me get in bed with you

I can't even move much , but he makes space for himself and gets in bed

He cuddles me , and the second I'm in his arms . I close my eyes and just zone out

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 23\*



\*Manzini kingdom\*

King Prince walks in the throne room ,  
Tyler is already sitting in waiting for him

Tyler : thank you for coming

The king takes his seat

King Prince : it's funny how I'm being summoned into my own throne room

Tyler shakes his head , he does not appreciate the attitude at all

But he feels he's ought to give his little brother some sort of respect , since he's now king

Tyler : my wife is not well , I'll be leaving later on

King Prince : that's soon

Tyler : and you heard what I said right ?

King Prince : oh yes , of course I heard .  
And I know you'll rather be there with  
her , than being here

Tyler : I need to talk to you , about what  
you told dad

King Prince : and what did I tell him ?

Tyler can see right through this bullshit ,  
that he's trying to avoid talking about  
whatever it is that's bothering him

Tyler : I heard you want to step down  
the throne

King Prince : mhm

Tyler : either you talk to me , or I fucking  
walk out of this room and leave . And  
after this , I don't want to hear anyone  
saying I've distanced myself from you all

The king sighs

King Prince : yes I'm stepping down so ?

Tyler : so ? Really

He's now getting angry

Tyler : TJ will take that throne and that's that , so the sooner you step down off it the better

He says getting up , and he's already upset . More like furious , and it's because the king is not willing to have talks like their father said

He walks out , and the king is not happy . That the throne is being passed off to another lineage that's not his

This issue of not being able to have kids ,  
has really broken him . And it has made  
him feel like he's a less of a man

It doesn't matter how much his wife  
tries to show him that there's nothing  
wrong with not having kids

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

I have never seen TJ's mother this worried , like she's always by my side always with me

Yet she's not well herself , I really do appreciate this woman right now

And TJ seems to be going out of his mind, he's so worried and it kills him that there's nothing he can do

I'm sick now , there's even no joke about it . This baby is refusing the blood now , so I have nothing that gives me strength

It's just a mess , I'm so weak . And in the past few days she has grown too much I say

My tummy is bigger , like huge . And it's starting to even be heavy on me

I don't know if that's normal or what

I'm not okay , emotionally even .

Because I haven't even told my mother

I don't want to worry her , my father told me that she's ready to give birth any day now



The midwife is already by the palace , so that means things are about to happen

She doesn't need to hear me saying , I'm sick . And not even eating anything

Even normal food , it's a struggle I can't stomach them

And I can't tell my father , because now he doesn't know about our secret

TJ : hey

He walks in , I'm in the lounge watching cartoons alone . His mother just went into the kitchen

To make me soup , I don't even know why she bothers . But she still tries

Me : hey

I'm so drained , that even talking takes a whole lot of energy from me

TJ : you want some cuddling ?

He's loosing his mine , I smile and pat next to me . He comes and sits down

Me : where have you been ?

TJ : talking to JJ , he wants to come back

Me : he's okay ?

TJ : yeah , he just wants to be here for us

Me : that's nice of him

He chuckles

TJ : you don't even like him

Me : no I do like him , he's just frustrating that's all

He holds my hand , and rubs on my tummy

TJ : how are you feeling ?

Me : I feel like throwing up

TJ : you didn't eat ?

I shake my head no

TJ : this baby is being crazy

I laugh slightly , and it leaves me slightly  
breathless

TJ : why is she hurting you now ?

Me : we knew this was going to happen

TJ : before the whole blood situation yes,  
not now . You really should be fine , I  
hate that I put you through this

Me : don't blame yourself

TJ : if I had just....

Me : stop

I brush the side of his face

Me : whatever happens , happens

TJ : no

Me : we can't avoid what's happening  
right now okay , we just have to be  
prepared for anything

TJ : I refuse to lose you

Me : it's okay

A tear escapes his eye , and this guy is failing . Like this is weighing down on him

Me : I love you

He looks at me , and I've forgotten the break up . I just want him to know that I love him

TJ : I want these damn 19 and 17 years of marriage like our parents have . I want that

Now he's making me cry , we have never really spoken about marriage or such things

Not on a serious note like he is right now, lord how the hell do I survive this ?

.

.

.

.

\*Ntsika\*



I have decided to come back to Cape Town , I had a job for young Oceans

But since he couldn't take it , I had to use his men into my disposal

And well they didn't disappoint , and that's them representing their leader

Lwazi : you want to see him ?

I nod

Lwazi : thought you would just call

Me : no , I want to see him

He sighs , I can see this nonsense from Lwazi . He really has issues when it comes to TJ

But Lwazi doesn't do any jobs , he's just merely a driver to me and a friend of some sort

He can't even replace TJ , if I were to let go of him . Which will not happen any time soon , or ever . That boy is my golden star , and I intend to polish him to the best of his abilities

Lwazi : okay

He walks out , I need to put him in his place . I take my phone and call TJ

TJ : what ?

Okay , he's in a bad mood . Not that he's ever in a good mood , especially when it comes to me

But he doesn't sound okay today , we may not like each other . But he's one of my own right now , which means I care

Me : I want to see you

TJ : now is not a good time

Me : a few minutes

He sighs

Me : it's not about a job

TJ : how do you see me when you're in Joburg?

Me : I'm in Cape Town

TJ : fine , tomorrow then

He drops the call

Me : fuck

I guess now he's making me feel what it feels when I always drop the call on him

He's even calling shots of when I can see him , and I wanted to see him today

But I guess it's fine , as long as we do get to meet

.

\*INSERT 24\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

My father arrived like early in the morning , I have no doubt he didn't take any flight

He sure must have been driving from  
Durban to Cape Town

I knew he wasn't going to stay away for  
far too long , especially with my mother  
not well

But since yesterday , she's been up and  
out of bed . Trying to help me take care  
of Bia

This whole situation of hers , is just sad  
and frustrating . I really thought we had  
this in the bag , like she was going to be  
fine and all

But now , I don't know anymore . And  
that scares me

I certainly did not take her father's  
words for granted , because he fucking  
meant them

And she's the last person I want to lose  
in my life , and to lose in this matter

I could never forgive myself , for taking  
away the life of a young girl like that

That's my baby girl that's there killing  
her if she really is



So yeah I'll be the one responsible for that , I'm the one who got her pregnant after all

She's up today , busy doing her school work . I don't know if this is a good sign or what

Maybe she's just pushing herself and avoiding the pain she's in

I feel so useless right now , like why can't I just do something and help her ?

Voice : lets talk

It's my father passing by me , I was just leaning against the door frame watching her

I follow him to the porch

Dad : you see she's not getting better ?

Of course he had to be told that she's sick , she's under his roof after all

If anything happens to her , this affects him just as much

Me : yes

Dad : TJ , I've been here . And I've made mistakes like tons of them , I wasn't so ready to lose your mother . I was ready to rather lose you than her , and if that was possible believe me you son . You wouldn't be here right now

Okay that's not a nice thing to tell your child

Dad : but she refused and she fought me, to a point that it led us separating

Okay now that's new , I didn't know about that

Dad : she wanted her baby to live , she didn't care . And during that separation she had to say with her brother , you can just imagine how the whole situation felt like . She's carrying a baby that's killing her , and I'm not there with her to support her . It was only when she had to give birth , I stopped everything and said they should cut her and take the baby out . But the whole thing was just hell

I can imagine how it would be right now, if Bia wasn't here

Dad : all I'm saying is that , I took a stand a charge at the last minute . Both of you were saved yes , which proved the best thing ever to us . But don't make these same mistakes I made , act now if you must . Her life comes first , it should come first before the life of your child . That's someone's child , a worse a Ferrari

It's just how he says a Ferrari , our fathers are just the worst

Dad : be a man think on your feet , and save this situation if you can . Do whatever it takes

And he walks away , leaving me feeling  
like he just left me with a message

And it's a hard one , and if it ever came  
to it . Bia should never loose her life ,  
rather it be the baby

That's twisted now and fucking messed  
up

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Ntsika\*

He walks in , and he looks so drain . Even his spirit is just not so hyper like he usually is

He grabs a seat and sits down

TJ : I'm here

Me : you look like shit

He chuckles

TJ : you're lying

I raise a brow

TJ : but I do feel like shit

Now we're getting somewhere

TJ : so what is this ? We're meeting and it's not about a job

Me : you want to tell me about your situation

TJ : situation ?

Me : let's not play games with each other



TJ : okay enough , look I don't know when did we get here . And I appreciate it , but believe me you . My situation as you call it , there's nothing even you can do about it

Me : indulge me

TJ : why ?

He calls a waiter over and orders beer

Me : I just want to help

He chuckles

TJ : wait ...no you...you want to help ?

Me : don't mock me , I'm being serious

He raises his brow , and seems to now realise I really am serious

TJ : you can't help me , I doubt anyone can

He sighs

Me : try me

He's hesitant and reluctant to say

TJ : if I tell you this , you have to take it to the grave with you

Me : I'm taking a lot of things with me , adding just one more won't hurt

He smiles

TJ : so my girlfriend is pregnant , and let's just say the baby is not exactly normal . And it's literally hard for her to be carrying this baby . We had means to help her and thought she's better , but now she's worse and not okay at all . The means are not working , possible that I can lose her when she gives birth

He's so vague about this , but I think I get this whole thing

Me : remember when you got shot ?

He nods

Me : I know it didn't even take it days to heal that wound

He just stares back at me

Me : I knew that the other days , you had just been putting the bandage for no

reason whatsoever . Because the would  
had completely healed in just a day

And that gets his attention , but like I  
said he's not a fucking pushover and  
right now he's showing me that

Because he doesn't even look fazed by  
what I just said to him

TJ : so what has that got to do with that?

Me : that bullet went inside of you , and  
it wasn't something you could have  
pulled out . So right now I say to you ,

your own body rejected that bullet and it  
popped it out

His eyes tell me that's exactly what  
happened

Me : and of course , you self heal

He looks down shaking his head

Me : that means you're not normal , as  
much as your child isn't . Clearly if the  
mother is having issues , is because she's  
nothing like you

TJ : fine , I still don't see where you can help me

Me : I have a facility , it's legal .  
Everything done there is by law , but the law can always be broken right

He slightly laughs

TJ : it's as illegal as it gets

Me : that's not the point , the point is that with the kind of expertise that's there . Both your child and girl could get to live

TJ : could ?

He leans over the table

Me : for as long as they both can hold on  
, this is a test if time . Nothing can ever  
be accurate

He sighs

Me : just think about it , and when you  
get a change go see the facility . If you  
decide to take her there , let me know



He seems to be conflicted , but at least he's thinking about it

.

.

.

.

\*Camps Bay CPT\*

Ledi walks in their bedroom , her husband is laying down on the bed

She's worried about him , since he came back from home yesterday

He just seems like not himself , which means there's something that's just bothering him

She feels much better today, and she was glad to hear from Sambulo that Thuto is better as well

So it just a mere fever and nothing else , it had her worried

Ledi : Manzini

He looks up , and smiles looking at her

Tyler : Sweetheart

Ledi : is everything okay ?

He holds his hand out , and she takes it .  
Sitting on the space that's next to him on  
the bed

Ledi : you seem bothered

Tyler : Prince wants to step down the  
throne

Ledi : what ?

She's shocked by that , she did not see it coming

Tyler : yeah

Ledi : but why ?

Tyler : who knows why ? I wonder what's happening in that boys mind

He's getting angry

Ledi : that's a whole king you're calling a boy

Tyler : he's still a boy and that's that , not even being king has done him any good

Ledi : this is a shock , such a drastic decision

Tyler : father was very strict that I shouldn't touch him , and maybe a beating would have done him good

His wife laughs

Ledi : violence doesn't solve everything

Tyler : with him it always does , may be for the time being yes . But it always does

She shakes her head , she can see just how frustrated her husband is by this whole thing

Tyler : and now TJ has to take over the throne

Okay this catches her off guard even worse

Ledi : our TJ ?

Tyler : there's no another

He cannot miss his wife's reaction

Ledi : not my son at his age , he's a child.  
And having to take over royal duties ,  
not just any but that of being a king .  
While dealing with everything that's  
happening right now

Tyler : calm down , we both can say  
whatever and anything we want . But at  
the end of the day , the decision is his . I

still haven't had time to talk to him about this , once I've done so we will know where he stands with this

Ledi : but why him ?

Tyler : who else ? Prince has no kids , and there's no way Azania could rule Manzini . Maybe Batlokoa yes that's exactly where she's headed , there's no way your brothers kids with Princess if they have any will rule Batlokoa

This whole royal business is just too much for one person



Like this one , princess married Sambulo  
and she loses her lineage ever ruling .  
Unless they carry pure blood

Because she's the woman that's royalty ,  
and the man is not so is slightly different  
than when it's the man that's royalty

Ledi : my poor son

Tyler : he's going to be fine

She doesn't doubt he will be gone , she  
just doesn't get why he's chosen to  
succeed his uncle

When he's purely just a tiny blue blood ,  
because of these halves they have within  
them

And she's just purely a commoner , her  
husband being half blood meant he can  
never be king

Which is why it was never a problem  
with them , about getting married

They never had anything royal disturbing  
them . Now things have taken a turn , a  
half blood will sit on the throne and will  
be king

.

\*INSERT 25\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I will not be telling my parents anything ,  
I just need to have a talk with Bia

If she has to go there , then she'll have to know the truth

I can't lie to her , but as for my parents they can't know

If I tell them , then it would raise so many red flags

What the hell am I doing with a man like Ntsika Dlamini ?

And how do I even know him ? I don't want those kind of questions around me

And I don't want them to even be associating me with crime or doing anything that's illegal

Me : my girl

She faintly smiles

Me : you good ?

Bia : she's kicking slight , the pain has slowly surpassed

Me : that's good

I sit down next to her

Bia : don't be upset with her

I smile

Me : I just hate that she's hurting you

Bia : I heard you were hurting your  
mother worse

Okay , and she laughs

Bia : don't look at me like that

Me : but really ?

Bia : just leave my child alone

Me : our child

She frowns

Me : anyways there's anyway that I  
could maybe help to not be this sick until  
you give birth

I haven't even gone to look at that  
facility , because after meeting with

Ntsika I just wanted to come back home  
and be with her

Bia : how ?

Me : please hear me out , before you  
accuse me

Bia : really TJ ?

I tilt my head away from her

Me : there's a place , I haven't gone to  
see it yet . I'm just telling you incase I  
believe it can help you , I would like us to



go there . But my parents cannot know where we're going , or what we'll be doing there

Bia : you're starting with these things of yours

Me : this is to save your life , both your lives . And if it means I have to keep doing my things , to save you I'll fucking do so

She shakes her head

Me : if you do decide that you'll go there, then we have to tell my parents another thing

Bia : a lie you mean

Me : haven't we lied before ?

She shouldn't start with me

Me : just think about it , I'll go check the place later today or tomorrow morning .  
The sooner the better , before things take a wrong turn

She just looks at me , but if only she can just think about it . That's all I need from her

.

.

.

.

\*Camps Bay CPT\*

The parents are outside by the porch ,  
Ledi is feeling much better today

But the one thing that's a worry is her son going to be king

And you can never know with TJ , he might accept this without any hassle

Or he could just dispute it , for no reason whatsoever

And having his father to force this on him , is not what his mother wants at all

Ledi : so let me get this right

Tyler looks at her

Ledi : your brother wants to step down the throne because he has no kids , like his own direct bloodline ?

Tyler nods

Ledi : and is he okay with TJ taking over the throne ?

She can't avoid this , Prince could not be all for this idea . And it could mean bad blood between the family

Tyler : I don't think so , but right now I don't care

Ledi : but he could take his anger out on my son , and hurt him

Tyler : TJ will shed him to pieces , before he can even leave a scratch on him

Ledi : Tyler !

He shrugs his shoulders

Tyler : what it's the truth

Ledi : this is a mess

She heaves a sigh

Ledi : how come Soso was pregnant with your brothers child , if he cannot have kids ?

Tyler : when I....when I killed that girl I felt nothing . Like there was nothing that made me to want to spare her , because of the baby or whatsoever . My brother's kids are also my blood , and my own kids in a way . But I felt nothing

Over the years she happened to know what happened to Soso

And it caused quite a rift between them , but over time she made peace with it

It happened , and well she was the reason Tyler was all crazy like that

Ledi : what are you saying ?

Tyler : how can I kill my own brother's child , and get to live on like it's nothing .  
And have no remorse whatsoever , not even feel a tiny bit of guilt

Ledi : wait.....

She cannot believe this, even the thought of just thinking that just maybe the baby was never his



Ledi : but ....

Tyler : let's not , I was just saying

Ledi : wow

She claps her hands once

.

.

.

.

\*Princess\*

I'm thinking to leave , I really thought coming home would really bring me some sense of belonging but it's not happening

I would rather leave and go back to my life , than be here

Prince : hey

He stands next to me , putting his hand on my back

Me : hey

Prince : everything well ?

Me : well considering

I sigh

Prince : I'm sorry , and you know dad will  
come around

Me : I just went too far , and I don't  
blame him

Prince : come on he's already over that ,  
just go talk to him

Me : I will , once I've gathered the strength

We stand in silence for a while

Me : is it true ?

Prince : what ?

Me : that you're stepping down

Prince : what's the point ?

Me : Prince what's wrong ?

Prince : I have no child of mine that will succeed me , your brother killed my child all those years ago . And he doomed me

He says with such Vernon , and it scares me to be honest

Me : wait , what do you mean he killed your child ?

Prince : he killed Soso along with my child

What the hell is this ?

Me : but Prince wait, Soso's body parts were found in the veld . Ripped to pieces, it was concluded it was some wild animal

Prince : and that animal is your brother I saw him do it , and now his son gets to have the throne . My throne , that his half blood doesn't fucking deserve . But he's always taken what I wanted right , he started off with Ledi . I shouldn't be shocked anymore

He walks away , and I've never seen him this angry . This cannot be good , brothers will spill each other's blood

And what does he mean he saw Tyler kill Soso and his child ? All this doesn't make sense to me

And it's leaving me really scared , I don't know what to believe . I have no idea what is what

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

My stubborn self is so tired right now , I just want to sleep . But where , when we've just arrived at this place .

It was like an hour drive from the Oceans home . I just told TJ that I'm coming with him , and he wasn't up for it

But I told him , the only way I can even consider this thing of his . Is if I see the place my self

And we've just arrived , I'm so tired . I look like a 6 months pregnant woman. And it's just at two months now , see me again having a child with TJ



TJ : you should have stayed home

Me : leave me alone

We walk inside , and the outside is nothing compared to the inside of this place

I feel like I'm walking into one of the 5 stars hotel somewhere in Tuscan

Me : wow

I can't help but look around , my eyes roam

Voice : you came

I shift my focus and it's a man

TJ : yeah , but we can't stay long as you can see she insisted to come with

Okay he's not happy about that , he's not even hiding it

TJ : this is Ntsika Dlamini , and this is his facility

So he's one of the criminals associates , I

have no doubt this is shady . And that's why we can't tell his parents the truth

Ntsika : hi , I see why you're with him

What does that mean ?

TJ : stop right there

Ntsika : let me show you her wing , I prefer she be far away from everyone .

TJ : special treatment doesn't score you points with me , I still get paid you know

Ntsika chuckles , and we all walk to this wing . And well it's like a whole private suite

Ntsika : this is where she'll be staying , and we have all kinds of medical equipment best of the best . Not to mention , the doctor I'll be assigning to her . She'll be having the best medical care at her disposal 24/7 . Worry not I know the situation , and the guy is well equipped to deal with such

He's selling this to the best of his abilities , and right now I'm desperate . But can this help ?

Me : doctors could never understand this situation

Ntsika : because it's not normal right ?  
But my doctor knows what he's doing ,  
he's one of a kind

TJ : you actually believe in this thing of yours ?

Ntsika : I do

And right now , I'm slowly believing in it

TJ : what do you think ?

What does he think ? Cause this affects him as much as it affects me

Me : will you be here ?

TJ : everyday all day

Ntsika : worry not , he'll be staying here with you

Okay that's a relief , now I'm like what do we do ?

- 
- 
-

\*INSERT 26\*

\*Princess\*

I didn't sleep a wink last night , and right now I am so conflicted

I don't know what to believe anymore ,  
what Prince told me left me shaken

And just questioning myself , like am I  
that weak ? Why didn't I get anything ?

Is it even possible , that my own brother  
is capable of such ?

But how , because I remember well my  
father saying Tyler is not like us

If he was in a way I would believe that he  
did kill Soso



But now it's just so not possible , I wonder if this is not Prince being vindictive for nothing

Maybe jealousy , that the throne is going to another lineage . If that's the cause , then my brother needs some serious help to be honest

He will go poking at Tyler , and we will bury him . Because now Tyler might not be like us

But he's not to be taken for granted at all , Prince better get his life and himself in check

Now I seriously , do need that Cape  
Town trip before going back home

Me : dad

He looks up

Me : can I please have a word ?

He nods , I've decided to take my  
brother's advice and talk to him

I sit down , and just take a moment  
calming myself down

Me : I am so sorry Manzini ....

And tears stream down my face

Dad : wipe those tears off , you know I'm not angry with you

Me : I didn't mean to upset you , I was just angry and I....I took ...I let my emotions get the better of me . I'm really sorry

He gets up and sits next to me , he comforts me

Dad : I am sorry too

Me : no , you were right . I was fighting everyone to get my point , and what I want . And again with the Nia situation , I just went about it the wrong way

Dad : your anger with that one is justified , but she's your little sister . You're the adult here Princess , and that means you have to lead and show her

Me : I know , I know dad . And I promise I will right and do better

Dad : it's okay , now let's go make me  
some tea

Yeah that's what old age does , the great  
Africa Oceans drinking tea with his  
princess

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I've been in the kitchen with my mother for the most part of the day today

Bia has shut down , well more like shut everything out

I guess she's still thinking about the whole facility thing with Ntsika

And speaking of him , we need to meet .  
That facility is one hell state of a facility

And I still don't know what exactly he does there , or why he has it

Also how come he's got equipment , a doctor he thinks is well equipped to help us with our situation

Exactly what does he know about us , and what we are facing right now

I have a few questions for him , and I can only get them from him

And I didn't want to ask him all those yesterday in Bia's presence

Mom : where did you two go yesterday ?

That catches me off guard

Me : just out

Mom : out where with a sick child like that Tyler ?

Me : to get some air nothing much , and we came back quick . Before anything happened

Mom : I didn't like that at all , Bia needs to rest

Me : I get it



Mom : let's bare in mind , that's someone's child . We can't be toying with her life , we have to be careful

Me : that's Ferrari's daughter

We laugh , and there's laughter behind us

Me : idiot

JJ : you have a death wish , mocking uncle like that

Mom : and who will be telling him ?

JJ : definitely not me aunt

We laugh

Me : you've been coming

JJ : I'm here leave it

Mom : glad you arrived safe , why didn't  
you call to be picked

Always babying us , this is an old man  
he's my age . So JJ is actually my  
grandmother's nephew , he's her uncle's  
grandson

His father being Jayden Nkosinathi  
Ngwenya . He's named after his father  
just like me

Me : he's here now , and who was going  
to pick him up

Mom : what are you doing ?

He laughs

Me : sitting here with you , bonding you  
know mother and son things

The look she gives me , tells me there's  
no bonding here

Me : okay fine

JJ : I'll go put my bags

He goes to his room , and it goes all  
silent now . There's no bonding

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

Me : really ?

Leo : yes

He doesn't sound happy , and we're on call . I actually called to talk to my parents

But he answered , and they've just told me that the baby is born

Cero : he looks like you

Oh my sweet boy

Me : he does ?

Leo : with his eyes , and pink lips

I laugh

Me : I can't wait to come meet him

My father called last night , and told me  
my mother was giving birth

I'm really sad that I missed all of that , I  
wanted to be home with them

Me : what's his name ?

Leo : I don't know yet

And he's shaking his head , it's just so  
cute

Me : okay well then , is dad there ?

Cero : he is

Me : please give him the phone , I love  
you both so much

Them : we love you

Melts my heart , they give the phone to my father

Dad : you don't look so good

Me : a headache

I hate lying to him , but then I can't tell him the truth

Dad : you took some meds right ?

Me : I did

Dad : okay get better



Me : I will father , I hear we have a little boy that looks like me

He laughs

Dad : they lied , he actually looks like them . They just didn't want to say , because he's tiny

Me : hah makes sense

Dad : I can't wait for you to come back

It's carrying some kind of pain , and it hurts me .

Me : I will be back soon father , I  
promise

Dad : we love you , take care of yourself  
alright

Me : I will father , and I love you so much

At least it gives him a smile

Me : please greet mother for me , and  
kiss the new man

He laughs

Dad : she will do the kissing part

We laugh

Me : okay then , until we talk again

We hang up , now I long to be back home

Voice : my girl

I turn and look at him , he's made this a habit to just stand at the door and be looking at me

Me : papi

He smiles

TJ : how are my girls doing ?

Me : we good

He nods , I can tell he's dying to know  
and ask me

Me : it's okay

He looks at me

Me : it's okay , we will go there

TJ : really ?

I nod , he walks in

TJ : you have no idea what this means

Me : it still can't work

Tj : we have to trust that it can okay ?  
Just a little bit of faith and hope . Like  
that's all that we need

He sits down next to me , and pulls me closer to him .

Me : I'm going to get horny , please don't start with me

He chuckles

TJ : just a kiss

Me : I....

He shuts me up with a kiss , the second I start getting hot flushes I pull out . He laughs

Me : stop

TJ : I'm sorry , it's the drought for us .  
You know dry season

Me : doesn't mean you should go out  
there and stick it everywhere

He sighs

Me : I'm sorry

TJ : no....it's okay . But I know what I  
signed up for , and well I'm prepared to  
see it through

We sit in awkward silence , until I decide to break it

Me : what will we tell your parents ?

He sighs

TJ : let's just say we're going to a retreat of some kind , they'll give me hell that's for certain . But I think I can manage just fine to convince them

I nod , there's just so many lies with us . After this , I wouldn't mind telling no lie ever in my life



TJ : have you called home ?

Me : I was talking to them , and I'm a big sister again

He smiles , brushes my tummy . He doesn't do it much as of late

Because when he does , his baby girl kicks like some crazy soccer player

TJ : that's nice , they should send you lots of pictures and videos . So you don't miss out much

Me : won't be the same yes , but it'll still be amazing

TJ : it will be

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*INSERT 27\*

\*Sambulo\*

I'm woken up by a knock , and I wonder who the hell would be waking me up this early

Me : this had better be fucking...

I open and I did not expect her , okay I was not expecting her at all

Me : uhm hi

Princess : hey

It's not even 07:00 Am , and she's at my door step

Princess : are you going to let me in or ?

That or , is saying other things . A whole lot of other things , women and their minds . I make way for her and she walks in , I heave a sigh . Because of the way she's looking around

Me : there's no one here

Princess : I didn't say

Me : right

She takes her coat off , I take it me hang  
it for her

Princess : where are the kids ?

Me : down the street

She looks at me for a further explanation

Me : birthday of their friend , so they did a sleep over

She nods

Princess : I guess Thuto is better now ?

Me : she's fine

Princess : that's good. Are you fine ?

No , I'm still wondering and thinking why is she here ? Not because I am not faithful or anything

But just common decency , to let me know that hey I'll rock up at your house in the morning

Me : I'll answer you right I've had a shower , and had breakfast . So get on with it

She opens her mouth , I shut her up with a kiss . And I leave her there

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

I'm packing , TJ said we will leave later on . I don't even know how ready I am for this

We got to talk to his parents in the morning , and I ended up leaving them alone

Because his father wasn't having it , but I guess eventually he managed to get them to agree

I had just one emotional call with my mother this morning



And it felt like I was just saying goodbye ,  
I did not like that at all

But I did mention something , about  
leaving this place for a while

I did not go much deep into details , but I  
think she somehow caught on

And she just told me to make sure that  
me and the baby are fine

That's the main concern in everything  
we do right now , both of us seeing this  
through and making it alive

TJ walks in , he has gone out with JJ . To get things for me , not for their own plans

TJ : I managed to get everything

Me : okay thank you

He sits down on the bed

TJ : JJ was busy cross examining me

Me : and you told him

He nods , I knew it . There's no way he wasn't going to tell him

They're just close like that , so I'm not even upset or anything

At least there's just one person who knows the truth , about where we're going and why

TJ : and the baby's clothes ?

Me : on the way you just have to make a plan and get those

TJ : how many ?

Me : not many , just a few

TJ : okay

Me : I'm really not okay today

TJ : you're weak , you haven't eaten anything ...

Me : you know I can't eat , it's always painful when I throw up

TJ : it's okay , it's okay

He gets up , and takes the bag from me  
putting the clothes away

TJ : come here , let's lay down and I'll  
finish this

Me : we have an hour before we leave

TJ : yeah it's fine

We lay down on the bed , he cuddles me  
from behind

And he hates it , but this tummy makes  
things difficult

\*Princess\*

I feel like Sambulo was so not happy to see me , like the reaction was not what I expected

When we had breakfast it was just so awkward , we didn't even say much to each other

And I couldn't believe he just told me to cook and I did

His daughters are still not back , the parents of the friend called and asked him if they can come back tomorrow

And just celebrate this whole weekend , and they were happy to . So he said it's fine they can sleep again

And he's just been busy with a whole lot of things all day , that I didn't even understand

And now it's late , I want to go to see my friend , sister in law

Me : I'm leaving

He's watching TV , not even paying attention to me at all

Sambulo : is everything okay ?

I should be the one asking him that

Me : yes

Sambulo : so where are you going ?



Me : to your sisters house

Sambulo : it's already noon , you can  
always go there tomorrow

What's wrong with this man ?

Me : tomorrow ?

He puts the remote down

Sambulo : are you not sleeping here ?

Now this is a shock

Me : what ?

Sambulo : don't what me , ngiyabuza  
(I'm asking)

Me : when did we even talk about me  
spending the night ?

Sambulo : the second you stepped foot  
in my yard , you should have known that

Me : kodwa Sambulo (but)

Sambulo : hamba so you can come back  
(go)

Wow

Me : so you're serious about this ?

Sambulo : it's been what , weeks since I've had sex

I want to laugh but I won't , Sambulo will never cease to amaze me

Me : so you think I came here for sex ?

Sambulo : that's not what I said , and that is definitely not how I see you .

You're not some sex object , I'm a man  
still

I get up and take my bag

Me : I'll be back Sambulo

Sambulo : it's babe to you , and give me  
a kiss before you leave

I was just minutes ago , and now he has  
me laughing and smiling

I press my knee on the couch , leaning  
down kissing him and he kisses me back

The feeling down in my coochie , tells  
me yes I have to be back

Sambulo : I love you

I peck his lips

Me : and I love you

I head towards the door

Sambulo : if you don't come back , I'll  
come fetch you myself there

I laugh going out

\*Tyler Jnr\*

It's almost 17:00 and we're leaving now

My mother is not happy , but the resort  
lie kind of soften her up

She agreed that Bia can use the time  
out, and fresh air

We've said goodbyes and JJ is coming with , just to help me get the baby's clothes

We walk out the door, and we meet my aunt . Shocker I wasn't expecting her

Aunt : it's the prince's

JJ : we know , there's no need for you to be calling us one

Aunt : I will smack you so bad and....

She freezes as she lays her eyes on Bia ,  
it's scary to be honest

Me : are you okay ?

Aunt : mhm.

She nods rapidly

Me : okay , this is Bianca my girlfriend  
and well the mother of child

Aunt : I see



She looks at me , her facial expression is changed

Aunt : and you guys are going somewhere ?.

Me : yeah a resort so she can rest

She nods

Aunt : let me not keep you then

She moves out of the way and we walk past her

Aunt : Bianca

She calls and we look at her

Aunt : it's nice to meet you

Bia just smiles , and my aunt goes inside  
the house

JJ : strange

Bia : that was just awkward

We get inside the car , and JJ drives out .  
While I sit in the back with Bia

Bia : who was that ?

She's a bit freaked out

Me : my aunt , the one that's a queen in Botswana

Bia : you saw how she was looking at me?

I nod , I think we all saw that

Bia : it was creepy JJ

Me : well she's some kind of....well I don't know what . But I know she's gifted , so maybe she saw something

Bia : do you think something is wrong with the baby ?

Me : no

It doesn't matter what I think , she shouldn't even be stressed right now

And it's amazing just how everything is about the baby to her right now

It's just beautiful to witness her loving  
her child in this state

.

.

.

.

**\*INSERT 28\***

**\*Princess\***

Ledi : is everything okay ?

She snaps me out of my thoughts

Me : yes sorry

Ledi : why are you lying ?

I sigh , I've been distracted since meeting that girlfriend of TJ

Me : how has it been ?

Ledi : shifting things from me now

I smile

Me : I had the most weird day with your brother ever , and now I have a hell of a night waiting for me

She laughs

Ledi : I can't believe you right now

Me : better believe , and I'll rather hear how things have been here

Ledi : well what can I say ? We're trying

I nod

Ledi : and so far , so good despite everything else

Me : at least

Ledi : better than worse right ?

Me : definitely , and I hear TJ will soon take over the throne at Manzini

She sighs , now I'm guessing she doesn't like this much



Me : you don't want that ?

Ledi : it's not about what I want , it's about what all this will do to the family

Me : meaning ?

Ledi : your brother Princess

Me : Prince you mean ?

She nods , and I remember our conversation . Maybe I should have this talk with Ledi

Me : he said something when I was back home

Ledi : who , Prince ?

Me : yeah

Ledi : okay , what did he say ?

Me : a whole lot of things , and I think he's just carrying a whole lot of anger inside of him

Ledi : okay , that's not saying much

Me : I don't know how to say what he said , without offending you

Ledi : oh was it about me ?

Me : more like your husband

Ledi : right , well don't tell me if you don't want to

Now I feel like she's getting annoyed with me.

Me : he said Tyler killed Soso and his child , he took you and now his merely half blood son will sit in his throne

And he expression is just blank , I guess being married to Tyler so many years she has gotten it

Ledi : your brother has serious issues I tell you , and I don't think my husband and I want to indulge him in that

Me : wow , okay you took that better than I thought you would

Ledi : well as I was still saying , but if he dares come after my son . I swear I will rain all wrath on him , he won't know want hit him . Not with my son

Okay , now that has me worried

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*Bianca\*

First night here , wasn't so bad as I thought it would actually be

Even though , this morning I had to be hooked up on so many drips

Like it's crazy , there's like 4 at the same time . I don't know if this this healthy or what

TJ : you sure .....

Ntsika : trust me , the doctor knows what he's doing . This will keep her hydrated daily , and having strength .

Making up for all the time she wasn't eating , she will be okay

TJ : how do you feel ?

Me : I don't know , I'm a bit dizzy

Ntsika : side effects she'll be fine

This man worries me , I hope he's not killing me and my baby here

The way he's so trusting of these things of his , he's not giving me peace

TJ : give us a minute

He nods and walks out

Me : who is he to you ?

I feel so sleepy right now , I'm drowsy .  
But this I need to hear

TJ : just a guy a I know

Me : papi I won't lose my baby right ?

TJ : don't worry yourself about that ,  
you're here to get help remember ?



Me : you trust him ?

TJ : I do

Me : okay , that enough for me

He plants a kiss on my forehead

Me : I need to sleep

TJ : okay , don't hurt yourself pulling  
these right ?

Me : I'll lay still don't worry

TJ : I love you now

Me : always

I close my eyes with him fiddling the sheets and I'm gone fast asleep

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

Like Ntsika had this doctor of his check on the baby , and well my baby girl had fully grown

Like she's a whole human being right now , like everything is there . It was just one hella crazy great amazing moment for us

And now he has a baby monitor installed in the room , just so we can see what she's doing 24/7

Creepy if you ask me , because she's just there on the monitor . And we'll be getting to see her all the time

My girl hasn't seen that , because she's asleep . And I saw no need to wake her up

Ntsika : are you good ? I'll be leaving maybe tomorrow

Me : that's soon

He chuckles

Ntsika : I only came here because of you

He makes me think about this now

Me : why are you doing all this ?

Ntsika : what ?

Me : all this , what's it for ? And what do you get out of it ? I mean I get my woman and child , what's it for you ?

He smiles

Ntsika : I need you focused at all times , and if you're worried and stressed . There's no way that you can be your best at your work , I pay you to be this great . And I figured , this is one crazy

situation you find yourself in , and in two weeks I have a job for you . Now I can't afford to have your mind-set disturbed , so why not pitch in where I can . Listen I don't know what you are , or what your baby is . But I know that's not normal , but this you works for me . I won't dare expose it , I won't run any tests about it . And worry not , you don't owe me shit . I pay you and not the other way around , just do your job and that's it

I never thought I would hear such words from him , so he just needs me a hundred percent focused on his job

And that's it

Me : if you're lying to me , I swear I will  
bring down hell on you

He chuckles

Ntsika : believe me boy , I know how to  
pick my battles . And you're not of those

Me : let's keep it that

He pats my shoulder and goes out

.

.

**\*INSERT 29\***

**\*TWO MONTHS LATER\***

**\*Princess\***



Been quite a rough past two months for me , like really rough

I left Cape Town , in a so not good note .  
Sambulo paused the wedding

I was so hurt , I don't want to lie . Even  
now I'm still hurt , and I feel like he  
won't ever want to get married

And he did all that right after he sent the  
letter to my brother

So you can imagine , just how Tyler was .  
Told me he was right from the beginning

I shouldn't be marrying Sambulo , but  
look at what my stubbornness has done

So yeah a few days after he sent the  
letter , he put everything on hold

Told me , me and him are actually not  
really there for marriage as of yet

Just because we missed out on a few  
years of each other's lives

And now we're back with each other ,  
doesn't mean let's rush for marriage  
right away

How about we just find each other , and  
rekindle what we had . Because a cold  
marriage is not his intention

Fuck that hurt , I didn't know that's how  
he saw our relationship to be honest

I honestly thought , we were good . Yes  
there was drama , and everything else

But I thought , we were good and still  
had each other like before

But I guess that was one sided , and right  
now I'm tired

Like I'm really tired , now it feels like I'm the one who wants a marriage from Sambulo

I love him yes , but I'm not desperate at all . I think I'm done with this

He left and got married , he made two kids . He comes back and does me like this

I don't think this shit with him is for me

And these past two months , it's not like anything has been happening

He's still back in South Africa , I'm still here . There's no improvement whatsoever , because he hasn't reinstated the negotiations again

Meaning he still doesn't see us getting married even now , so what's the point ?

I take my phone and call my brother , and it's taking all of me to make this call

Tyler : kaManzini

Me : how are you Batlokoa ?

Tyler : I can't complain much , how are you ?

Me : I'm ...okay

Tyler : don't lie

I sigh

Me : I guess I'm trying you know

Tyler : right

Me : I called for a favour

Tyler : I'm listening

Me : I don't know how this is done , if your return back the letter sent or your send another one ...

Tyler : what are you talking about ?

Me : the letter Sambulo sent , it's really useless right now . I want nothing to do with him , so I guess you can take it back to him . Or send another one , let him know there's no more of that wedding like ever

Tyler : you're cutting ties with him

Me : yes

Tyler : because he paused the negotiations ?

Me : I'm not desperate for him to marry me , he came back and said he wants me as his wife . Now he's gone back to his word , I look like the one forcing him . So let there be no more wedding , as definitely no more a us

He goes quite



Me : I'm asking you because the letter was sent to you

Tyler : I'll have a talk with him , I won't be sending any letters

Well that's also fine , just as long as he gets the message it's fine

.

.

.

.

\*Tuscan Kingdom\*

The young Prince is now two months ,  
the twins just love him so much

Life has been well this side , despite the  
absence of Princess Bianca

But once in a while she keeps contact ,  
her father did get news that she's no  
longer at the Oceans

Now problem for his men was them  
finding out where she is . Even today  
they still haven't found out , but what  
puts the king at ease is that she still lives

The queen is trying so hard , to focus on the young prince and the twins as well

It takes her mind off the things , and it gives her less worried and stresses

The most important thing to them , is that she's still alive . And they haven't had any scares

So little daughter is still holding on , which is just very courageous of her

Leo : by the time Bia comes back , the baby will be walking

Cero : but he's young

Leo : he's growing up though

The family is by the young prince chamber , his brother's never want to leave his sight

Cero : but he's still a baby

Leo shakes his head , like his brother is not getting what he's saying

King Ciro : has she said maybe when she'll come back to you ?

Queen Mbali : no

King Ciro : it's been too long now , a whole three months

Queen Mbali : but at least school work is still being done

The king nods , but he wants his daughter back home now

Queen Mbali : you know I have no doubt she'll be back soon

King Ciro : I think the next time she calls ,  
this is the next conversation to have .  
About her coming back home

Queen Mbali : please don't give her  
pressure , just let her have a bit of time

King Ciro : she's had enough , and it's  
about time she comes back home

He's adamant , and doesn't even seem  
like he will back down for anyone . Not  
even his wife

.

.

\*Camps Bay CPT\*

JJ is the only one person who has access to TJ and Bianca

And by all means , he tries to assures the family everyday that they're okay

Although he has not said where exactly are they , he's never upfront about that one

Ledi has finally given up asking , she's just happy Bianca is still alive

Now at 4 months of pregnancy , she didn't think she would make it this far

But she has , and her biggest fear . Is someone's child dying in their care

So as long as she lives , she just over looks a whole lot of other things



But the one thing she cannot overlook ,  
is the throne issue

She had to tell her husband , what  
Princess said . And she feels she  
shouldn't have

Because now Tyler is eager for Prince , to  
step down more than he was before

The fact that his brother feels so entitled  
to the throne , only because he's a blue  
blood . He's also a Manzini blood just as  
much as Prince is , and so it doesn't  
make him any better than him

He's put aside his feelings of Brotherhood , and approaching Prince in a note subtle way

He now doesn't care what happens really , because he feels disrespected and poked

Ad his only concern is getting that throne for his son

Not even his sister's issues with Sambulo get to him . He's having lunch with his wife right now , and he's just burning to tell her

Tyler : Princess called

Ledi : is she good ?

She asks genuinely

Tyler : I think not

Ledi : why ? Did she say something  
maybe or do something ?

Tyler : she's dumping your brother and  
cancelling the wedding altogether

Just saying this , he's holding in a later .  
And Ledi can see

Ledi : really so it's funny to you ?

Tyler : I did not say so

Ledi : yet you want to laugh right now

And he finally does laugh , she's leafy  
defeated

Ledi : this is just sad , did she say why ?

Tyler : this was just doomed from the beginning okay , there's no way that these two were going to make it into marriage

Ledi : you were against it

Tyler : and that's not the reason why it didn't work , they're just not for each other . Maybe 19 years ago yes , but now things have changed . And they're not the same people , they were back then . This wasn't going to work , and I'm glad it's done

Ledi : you're really happy aren't you ?

Tyler : come on , don't sound so sad

Ledi : he's my brother

Tyler : and she's my sister

Ledi : does he know that he's being  
dumped ?

He shrugs his shoulders

Tyler : she told me to send his letter  
back , or send another one and tell him

Ledi : your sister is being childish right now

She gets up taking her plate walking inside the house

Tyler : fuck I've done it

He follows her inside , and finds her by the sink . Doing nothing just looking outside

He kisses the back of her neck , and hugs her from behind

Tyler : I'm sorry

She says nothing

Tyler : he's your brother I know , but

He turns her around to face him

Tyler : can we just not let their issues  
come between us

Ledi : are you sending that letter ?

Tyler : no , I want to meet with Sambulo  
and we can talk



Ledi : he doesn't deserve this , doesn't she have at least some common decency to tell him ?

Tyler : it's not our issue , let's stay out of it

Ledi : I know you're happy so , don't try and make me feel better . But maybe it's fine

She pulls off his embrace

Tyler : now you're angry with me ?

Ledi : you know if Sambulo wanted to break things off with Princess , I wasn't going to let him send me to do it for him. Was I there when he was courting her and all ? You're just too happy for this , and that's just because you don't think my commoner brother is not good enough for your queen sister . And so yeah it's fine , and don't bother I'll tell him myself . Maybe he's just dodged a bullet , in a marriage was always going to be looked down at . Because he's a divorcee and has two kids with two women .

She walks away from Tyler , who is just left stunned by her words

\*INSERT 30\*

\*Sambulo\*

My sister came early this morning , and she doesn't look like herself at all

So I decided we go out , since the nanny for the girls is around

I just wanted is to be out of the house , and maybe give her a chance to tell me what's bothering her

With the girls at home , they were just going to crowd her and not even give us a chance to talk

Ledi : I could have just cooked you know

Me : I know

Ledi : it's always good to spend your money

I laugh

Me : what's wrong ?

Ledi : you and Princess

Me : what about us ?

I hope it's not about me pausing the wedding , I just feel like princess is not ready at all

Like she just has a lot to deal with , I feel like I'm trying all alone in this relationship

And a guy can take only so much , I feel like it's the same as all the times I've gone back to her

And she rejected me every time , I thought it was different this time around. But I guess I was wrong , because after 2 steps toward we took 20 back

Ledi : she told her brother to return the letter , or send another one . To say the

negotiations will not happen , and the  
two of you are over

That's new to me

Me : oh

Ledi : you didn't know

I shake my head

Ledi : I figured as much

Me : so she couldn't break up with me ,  
so she told her brother to do it for her .

And I guess Ty was very much happy to do so

Ledi : I told him where to get off

Me : you did not

She nods

Ledi : so that's that

Me : well that's fine

Ledi : you're accepting ?



Me : I wont run after Princess anymore ,  
this was the 5<sup>th</sup> time and I'm done

Ledi : I didn't think you'll just agree

Me : What's the point ?

Ledi : I thought you'll want to put up a  
fight , for your relationship at least .  
Cause the marriage yeah it's just a mess

Me : one can only fight so much alone ,  
it's one sided . She expects so much  
from me , and now it's clear it doesn't

matter how much I put effort . It'll never  
be enough for her

Ledi : is there someone else ?

Me : no , but I so wish there was

She laughs

Ledi : I'm glad there isn't , because  
they'll be blaming you instead of seeing  
her faults

She's right about that

Me : but I'm sure even now , they'll still  
fault me instead of her

Ledi : then they can all go jump to the  
nearest river

Me : someone is on war mode

Ledi : people being royalty , doesn't  
make them better than us

Me : and they need to know that , I think  
someone needs to tell them

Ledi : this will make it clear to them

I hope so , I'm really tired . And Tyler shouldn't bother sending that letter

I'm fine , I'll leave her sister alone .  
Maybe I should have done that a long ago

But I love her , and I wanted to give us a chance . Even after everything

Me : but are you two okay ?

Ledi : me and who ?

Me : your husband

Ledi : we're fine

Me : even after you told him off ?

She laughs

Ledi : o la mbora marn (he bored me)

We end up laughing

Me : yeah I'm glad you two are okay ,  
don't let whatever happened between  
me and Princess become a problem  
between you two

Ledi : he must just stay out of it , and I'll have no problem with him

I'll be fine , like it's not the end of the world

Me : guess not all of us , are meant to have what you two have

Ledi : maybe you've just been chasing the wrong woman , I'm really disappointed in Princess . I expected better from her , but yeah

Me : I'll get over it , now I should just focus on my girls and leave women alone . Clearly they don't work for me

Ledi : don't go for men now

Me : fuck that's even worse than disturbing

We laugh

.

.

.

.

\*Princess\*

Been on call with Tyler this morning ,  
and he told me how Ledi took the whole  
thing

And it's only understandable , Sambulo  
is her brother

I can't expect her to be siding with me  
right now

But this is for my sanity , and I need my  
peace . Clearly there wasn't any of that  
between us



I asked him to not let it cause a rift  
between him and her

This is not their problem , but mine . And  
it shouldn't affect them

So I guess I shouldn't count on any  
support from them , because we're both  
their siblings

Who will they support between us ?  
Surely Ledi wouldn't like it if I was the  
one being given support , instead of her  
brother

Now I've called Prince , and he doesn't sound okay . I feel like the walks are closing in on us

Me : have you decided to fight for your throne ?

I thought by now , he would have stepped down already

But he hasn't , so that means he's not ready to do this . Maybe he's chosen to abort his decision

Prince : fight with what ?

Me : you can always look at other means to have kids

Prince : don't go there it won't happen , tons of doctors have failed . And well the seer tried , him and many more . And it's still the same thing , I can't have kids

This is insane

Me : then how is it that Soso was pregnant with your child ?

Prince : I don't know Princess

Me : this is not about a low sperm count, or anything medical . It clearly states that you cannot have kids , so you were born that way . It can't be that the child was yours then

Prince : are you trying to say she lied to me ?

Me : well it was Soso , who didn't know she was a slut . She slept with half the school , before she hit the Jackpot with you

Prince : yet you're implying she cheated on me

Me : let's face the facts Prince ....

Prince : lets rather leave this please

I sigh

Prince : what's going on with you ?

Me : my relationship is over and so is the wedding

Prince : he cheated again ?

I laugh

Me : I wish because then I would have a reason

Prince : so you called things off ?

Me : I did

Prince : and for no reason ?

Me : no reason that can be explained

Prince : maybe it's for the best , it's not like you two were going anywhere with this

Me : wow , and no one had the faith in my relationship that's ....

Prince : you called it off , so don't even try to make me feel guilty about what I said

Me : I have duties to get to , so bye

I drop the call , and on top of the stress I already have

After seeing that girl , I've never been myself ever again

My gifts are not working , they've gone blind . And the seer has realised this

I thought I could block him , but without my gifts I am nothing and I have no power

Now I don't even know how to deal with that , I can't even ask Ledi where she is

Maybe I can ask Tyler , I mean we are still talking . So it wouldn't be awkward to ask him

.

.



\*Tyler Jnr\*

For the past 6 weeks she has been well ,  
very much so

That she regained her strength , and  
took the supplements . The drips were  
doing wonders

All that changed two weeks ago , and that's when hell happened

The monitor started showing a second baby , and that took us by surprise . Bia wasn't ready for that , yes I was shocked. But she took it even harder

Her tummy has grown so big , that I even feel like it's heavy on her . She's too tiny for this , and this second baby is not giving her rest at all

She's back to craving blood , and now her body is rejecting the supplements and the drips

I'm stressed , I've never even been so stressed like this

That even things went a bit rough , on my last job

I got three bullets to my chest , but I'm fine . But yeah it was a mess , that Ntsika didn't appreciate much

There were too many bodies , and a few diamonds lost . But fuck he went too easy on me . And besides that really wasn't on me , they didn't get lost while on me

Ntsika : and ?

He says walking in , along with Jase the doctor

Me : cut her open and take these babies out

And to think our parents don't know about this , they have no idea there's two kids now instead of one

Ntsika : what ?

Me : you can see she's dying , she can't take this anymore . Take those babies out of her

Jase : it could....

Me : I don't care , take them out and save her

Ntsika : are you sure about this. ?

Me : don't make me an idiot , by saying the same thing over and over again

Ntsika looks at Jase and nods

Jase : I'll get on with it , but I'll need assistance

Ntsika : no one needs to know about this, you have us . Tell us what you need, and show us what to do

Jase walks out

Me : us ?

Ntsika : don't be a coward now , you said she just be cut . So yeah us

Me : but we're not doctors

Ntsika : and we'll help Jase deliver those babies , either that or you wait until she's up

She's out of it , it's been three days now. She's still alive , but I doubt for long

Ntsika : don't be a coward

He laughs going out as well

Me : okay now I've gone and done it

I look at the babies , and one is so asleep

peacefully . And this monster is busy like  
nobody's business

Me : my girl I'm doing this to save your  
life , I want you alive and well .

Remember I can't lose you , even if you  
hate me when you wake up . It's fine , as  
long as you live

I hold her hand , it lacks weight . It's so  
light , and I wonder how she's still  
holding on and living

I kiss her forehead

.



\*INSERT 31\*

\*Sambulo\*

I've decided to just be home today , and  
spend time with my girls

But now I'm tired , and I think I need a  
get away from this

We've been playing dolls all day and it's  
no child's okay , excuse the pun

These people have energy for days , and  
they just don't seem to get enough

Me : can we take a break though

Thuto : now ?

No next year

Me : yes now

Pabi : but daddy....

Me : baby please

She sighs

Pabi : okay fine

Thank goodness , we walk to the kitchen.  
I pour juice for us , and hand them their  
glasses

Them : thank you daddy

We sit down

Thuto : daddy where is our mother ?

Good thing I still have the glass in my hand and not a sip in my mouth , I would have choked right now

Pabi : Praise said we don't have a mother

I put the glass down , and look at them .  
They're looking at me and they look sad now , it breaks me

Thuto : is our mother dead ?

Okay , what do I say ? It's one thing after another and I'm still digesting the first question

Padi : we don't say people are dead

Thuto , we say their angels

Thuto : oh so she's our angel ?

I never thought that one day , I would be faced with this . I knew that some day I would have to tell them the truth

But not this soon , I hadn't even thought about this

I don't even know what to say to them right now

Me : girls can we talk about this another time

Thuto : when ?

At only 7 she's too much

Me : soon

Thuto : daddy when is soon ?

Pabi : it's soon Thuto , daddy looks tired .  
Maybe he should go rest

She's looking at me with a different look  
now , and I don't know what she's  
playing at

Me : yes baby , you two behave now .  
And don't give aunty any problems  
okay?

Them : yes daddy

I kiss their cheeks and walks to my room,  
I'm seriously defeated right now

How will I ever address this issue with  
them , when the time comes ?

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Princess\*



I can't let this be , I have to know what's going on with that girl and that baby of her's

I'm still a bit scared , to ask Tyler . But I don't know think it'll be a bother than it would be with Ledi

I take my phone and call him , a lot is going wrong in this kingdom

People are starting to have talks in corners , and I don't like this one bit

Tyler : hello

Me : Batlokoa

Tyler : you sound very suspicious

I laugh

Me : don't be silly , I can't call my brother now ?

Tyler : I'm not saying

Me : well then , how are you doing ?

Tyler : I'm well , how are you ?

Me : I couldn't be better

Tyler : not crying over your failed relationship ?

I know he's happy , he won't even hide it. And it's hard for me , as much as I'm the one who let this go

I love Sambulo , and I thought we had a future today

To see it all disappear , and vanishes just like this it's hurtful

Me : no I'm not , I'm dealing with a lot

Tyler : oh ?

Me : yeah how's , uhm Bianca how is she?

He goes quite a bit

Me : Tyler ?

Tyler : she's fine

Me : okay and the baby ?

Tyler : fine too

He sounds somewhat , and I hope he's not being suspicious of me asking him this

Me : alright , I realise I haven't asked how are they doing ever since I left that side

Tyler : okay , well they're fine

Me : that's good news really

Tyler : indeed

Me : well let me love and leave you  
brother

Tyler : brief and short , take care of  
yourself

We hang up , I sit down on the bed

Me : this is a mess , but how can this be?

I can't even go to the water , without the  
fallen queens by my side communicating  
with me. I can't go to their home , that  
would be me causing trouble for myself

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

Jase is ready , and Ntsika is scaring me .  
The way he's so ready for this

You would swear that he's operated on  
someone else before , and that's crazy

Me : she better live

Ntsika : have faith

Me : what do you know about faith ?

Ntsika : clearly a whole lot more than  
you do

Jase : guys , can I just have you two get  
along for just this . And then you can be  
at each other's heads all you want

Me : tell that to him



Ntsika : says the one that's always going against everything that has to do with me

I ignore him

Jase : it's time , are you ready ?

Me : no

Ntsika : ready as ever

Jase : maybe you should go out if you'll faint

Ntsika : he wanted this , he has to brace himself

Me : I'm not a pussy

Ntsika : get to it then

Jase : we have to take her first , she's a bit fragile right now

We nod , and watch him as he does his thing . I'm literally just waiting to be cutting the cord and taking the babies nothing else

And it's just one disgusting thing , as he opens her .

I really can't stomach this , but I brace myself . He takes my little girl , hands me the scissor I cut the cord and take the baby

The second she's in my arms , she cries more like wails . I don't know if this how much and loud babies cry

- 
- 
- 
-

\*Princess\*

It's the baby's cry , that's waking me up .  
I'm sweating like crazy , my pyjamas are  
wet

Dripping wet , and I'm even cold . Like I  
had just been dipped into water

And not small water , deep waters  
there's nowhere that I'm dry

Even the sheets are wet , this is really a  
disaster

How can they do this to me , how can  
they let this happen like this ?

It's the same fate that has just been  
handed to Prince

He can't have kids yes , but what about  
me ? I was never given the chance to  
have them

Me : oh my god ?

Tears stream down my face , I sit up  
straight . Bring my knees up

Me : no....no....no...no

I can't stop hearing the baby's cry , and  
it's even hurting my ears

Me : why ? ....why me why ?

I served this kingdom and this throne to  
the best of my abilities

I give up my life for them , and this is how they repay me ?

By letting another lineage on the throne , and one that possess even more power than I do

This is how I loose my throne , over TJ's daughter . No it cannot be , it just can't be

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*INSERT 32\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I look at them , and my heart stops for a second

Ntsika : shit

Jase : it was all we could do they...



Me : shut up !

Ntsika : TJ calm down

Me : get out both of you , get out now

Jase : I have to...

Me : I said get out !

I snap

Ntsika : okay

He pats Jase's shoulder , and they walk out

I stand besides them , they fucking took so much after their mother more especially the boy

They look so innocent , like they weren't the ones doing all this to her

Me : I didn't mean to hurt you , I just wanted to save her . I just don't see my life without her , and now look what I've done

They look like normal size babies ,  
whatever that is . But then they're still  
so tiny

And now I'm afraid that I'll hurt them  
worse

Me : I'm sorry , but daddy has to save  
you . Mommy won't like it if she loses  
you two , regardless of everything

Voice : you're a father now

Me : do you have a problem with  
hearing ?

He chuckles

Ntsika : I'm here , what do you need ?

Me : draw blood from me , and fee it to them

I turn as face him

Ntsika : what ?

Me : see

He chuckles

Ntsika : how sure are you that they'll live?

Me : they will , my blood will taint theirs they will live . I self heal remember ?

He nods

Ntsika : I hear you , but what about her ? She's been refusing the blood , only he will take it

Me : draw it from a drip

Ntsika : into them ?

Me : yeah , a few hours max . They have to live

Ntsika : okay , let me call Jase

I nod , he walks out . I look at Bia sleeping on the bed so peaceful . She cannot wake up and her babies are dead

She will kill me , I have to save these two souls

.

.

.

.

\*Camps Bay CPT\*

Tyler walks in the bedroom , and finds his wife folding clothes

Things have been tense between the two , no matter how much they seem and look okay

You can't miss the slight tension that's there

Tyler : I'm sorry , it was fucking childish of me to react and take those news like that

Ledi : you wanted it , it has happened now can we please just pass over it

Tyler : like you said it's their business and I'm staying out of it

Ledi : you can keep that letter , and there's no need for you to tell my



brother anything . He's accepted your sisters break up , he'll move on with his life

Tyler can feel that his wife is hurting for her brother's sake

Tyler : I'm sorry sweetheart , please forgive me

He walks to her and holds his hand , he slowly turns her to face him

And he just engulfs her into a hug , she breaks down into a sob

He now sees the extent of his behaviour, throughout the whole situation between Sambulo and his sister

Tyler : I am sorry

She finally gathers herself and pull away from him , wiping her tears off

Ledi : do you know , how much it took from me . To never say anything , about everything you've been saying about my brother from the beginning . I stood up for you sister , I stood up for her . And kept quiet about Sambulo , but in the end you always rejoice at his downfall

and misery . Do you have any idea how that makes me feel , that's the only ...the only family I have Tyler . And you don't even give shit about that , your sister is all that . My brother doesn't deserve her, he will never be good enough for her . It's fine he gets it , but it just never ends with you Manzini people does it ? He was your damn friend for goodness sake . Please you and your sister stay away from my brother , and may his name never be associated with her . He got it

She tries to walk away from him , but he pulls her in

Tyler : I'm sorry , I am really sorry

He can now see the damage he has done, not only has his actions hurt Princess in the beginning

But his wife has been carrying a lot , because of the shameful treatment he has been giving Sambulo

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Sambulo\*

I'm shocked , and well to even say that is an understatement

I haven't seen Tyler in like a whole , because Ledi is the one that's been coming around

So I haven't been to their house , in quite a while

Me : what brings you here ?

We're standing by the door

Tyler : I....

He looks behind me and it's the girls ,  
they come running and smiling already

Thuto : uncle T

Tyler : my favourite niece

Paballo laughs

Pabi : you're just saying , how are you ?

This one is like a big sister , that's way  
older than 9 years

The way she gave me a nice save , during that mother talk

Tyler : I am well , and I see you two are good

Thuto : yes , did you come with your car

He nods , and they laugh jumping up all so excited already

Tyler : soon enough I'll be having a little girl myself , you too better get used to her being number one

Thuto : Bianca is having a baby , it's not yours

He chuckles

Tyler : don't say I did not tell you

Pabi : babies don't like cars very much

Thuto : but we're old so

They give him puppy eyes and he's smitten alright



Tyler : can we just keep it clean this time, no sweets scattered everywhere

He hands them the car keys and they run

Me : why do you always have to come here with treats in your car ?

He's shit with me , but never with my kids . He's just always the uncle T with them

Tyler : are you going to let me in ?

I move out of the way , and we walk inside .

Tyler : do you have beer ?

Beats me when he started drinking that one , because he's a man of expensive taste

He takes one from the fridge , and sits down on the high chairs . He opens it with his teeth

Tyler : sit down

Me : even in my own house you're still throwing shots at me ?

He takes quite a few sips of his beer

Tyler : we need to talk

Me : I don't want to talk about anything that has to do with your sister , I don't want that letter back nor do I need you to send another . I get it she's done with me , and there was no need for her to send you . She could have even sent a fucking message , and I could have still heard her just fine

Tyler : I fucked up okay , I let this whole big brother nonsense just ruin us . After all I'm also married to your sister , and you fucking didn't give me shit about it . Okay I hadn't been realising just how selfish , and what a bastard I have been . Until today my wife broke down , and laid it out to me . Man I'm sorry okay , I know now that won't fix a whole lot of shit that occurred . And maybe I'm too late , but if there's a slight chance that I can fix this whole shit . Let me , I'll talk to Princess and....

Me : no , I don't want you sister back . I really don't

Tyler : really ?

He doesn't believe me , his facial expression says it all

Me : yes I don't , and now that we're done and over with . You don't have to apologize now , yeah sure it's what you've always wanted . It's done , just stop flaunting it in front of my sister . It hurts her

Tyler : I wish you could have told me all this earlier on , I would have stopped this nonsense

Me : doesn't matter how

Tyler : yeah , you wanna take the girls to their aunt and we go get drunk ?

I laugh

Me : you will never change will you ?

Tyler : well , you don't want her back . So it's not like I can do anything to get your forgiveness

Me : sometimes you just need to be nicer , man you're too rude

He laughs

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

What a sight to wake up to , I don't even know how long I've been out for

And TJ has drips on both his arms , and  
he looks so drained

His babies are playing , hands and feet's  
in the air . It's a happy time for them

But I'm sure they're hungry , I don't even  
know when I gave birth to them

It was really a strain finding out that  
there's two babies

My baby girl is the one that was  
protecting me from his brother



He's the one who wanted the blood ,  
and she didn't want it so she fought

And she fought a good fight , for as long  
as she could . Until her brother was able  
to overpower her

And things took a turn for the worst , but  
I'm glad that they're both well

I try and get off the bed , and the pain  
that shoots me right above my abdomen

Me : awwww

Voice : you had an Operation , don't strain yourself

It's Ntsika

Me : hi....I didn't hear you come in

Ntsika : I'm like that , I didn't want to disturb . I saw you admiring your people

I smile

Me : is he okay , and why are you draining his blood ?

Ntsika : he's fine , do you want to see them ?

I nod

Ntsika : let me help you nicely

He helps me get off the bed , and I'm in my tracksuits . I'm cleaned well

Slowly , taking a few steps towards the babies . And oh my god , my heart melts as I look at them

Me : they're so beautiful

Ntsika : you can't be beautiful and make ugly babies , it just doesn't work like that

I can't even laugh , because of the pain

Me : why are you giving them his blood ?

Ntsika : they were slight , well....I don't know how to put this but dead

Me : what ?

Ntsika : but as you can see , they're fine now . Right , his blood brought them back to life

I feel like he's telling me a story right now

Me : isn't it enough , he doesn't look okay ?

Ntsika : Jase will come and disconnect them now

He better run , he really don't look well .  
I can only imagine how it was for him

Thinking that both his kids are dead ,  
okay he didn't think . Because he's  
saying they were dead

Does even make sense to me  
how, because the last time I saw them  
they were alive and well

My gift , looks so much like me . The  
eyes and all , he's going to be his  
mother's son this one

The princess looks so bubbly , I can't  
wait to leave this place and take them  
home

I love them so much , both of them . And  
I can say now this is who I live for

.

\*Princess\*

The way I am so depressed I haven't even been able to go outside of this hut

I haven't been able to show myself to anyone . And people are worried

But how do I face them , when I know that soon my reign will end

That girl is going to grow so rapidly , she won't be growing like a normal child

I'm just a few years she will be queen to this kingdom

Her parents could be with her until maybe she the age of 5 or 6 , and she won't be like a 5 or 6 years old

She will be much older than that , and after that she will spend quite a few years with the fallen queens . And her coming back is her taking her reign , and I will no longer have a place with Batlokoa



My ancestors have deserted me , my  
protectors are no longer by my side

I stand alone , and I'm a weak queen as  
it stands . The birth of that girl has  
ruined me

I hold my phone , and I can't stop the  
tears that steam down my face

I keep holding myself back from calling  
him , what will I even say ? I just need  
someone by my side right now . I finally  
dial the number , and it rings for a while.  
And this never happened before

Always at first or the second ring , my call would get answered

Sambulo : hello ?

Okay he's answering like he has no idea who he's talking to

Did her perhaps delete my number ? I know for a fact that he didn't know it by heart

But then , surely code it's showing that it's from Botswana . Can't he just figure out it's me

Sambulo : who is this ?

He's getting annoyed

Me : hi....its me

Sambulo : who's...Princess what do you want ?

He says annoyed now , and I cannot miss it . I just break down

Me : I....I just....

Sambulo : I got your message , that you clearly failed to deliver by a call yourself. And now you're calling me , come one . Lose my number and stop calling me

Voice : this is the one you asked for right?

That's a female voice saying , and he drops the call on me

I throw the stupid phone against the wall, and just break down . Letting a wail out . How can he do this , move on so fast ? I thought he loved me

.

\*INSERT 33\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I feel slightly weak , but I'm damn better now . And hearing that Bia was awake , and she even saw the babies

Now that made me happy , cause I'm glad everyone is alive and well

Ntsika : you fought a good fight

I chuckle

Ntsika : shows you're a man and not a boy

Me : will you stop calling me boy now

He chuckles

Ntsika : two kids , and how you fought  
for your little family to live and survive .  
You fucking earned that

Me : good

I get up grunting

Me : hold any jobs for me , for at least  
two weeks

He nods

Ntsika : understood , I think your man  
are good to hold the fort for you

Me : as long as they're good , then it's fine

He nods

Ntsika : I'll leave you , your photocopies are awake . And I'm sure they're hungry , their mother couldn't feed them

He walks out , I walk to them and I don't understand why they put them in the same cot now . My baby girl , is pulling her brothers hair . I guess it's not that painful cause he's not crying



Maybe he's taking it like a strong little man who knows

My phone rings , I take it out and it's JJ

JJ : don't kill me I'm on my way , I just got held up okay

Me : tell me you found it

JJ : I did

Me : okay

I drop the call , and pick the twins up .  
This girl just loves sleeping

She's already sleepy as it is , I hope their  
mother wakes up so they can breastfeed

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

I wasn't expecting to wake up to this at all , like I didn't even suspect anything all along

I woke up and breastfed the twins , and they can feed . My babies love food and that that's

And then while people are feeding , uncle JJ walks in and I get a whole marriage proposal

JJ : women basically cry for everything

He should just shut up

TJ : so what do you say ? Will you marry me ?

He's asked more than three times now , and I'm just crying . I can't even utter anything

They've taken the twins from me , I just can't believe this

TJ : you gave me the most precious gifts ever , I could never thank you enough . And I see no better way , to appreciate you and thank you . By making you my wife , and just be selfish about it you

know . Have you all to myself and them  
for infinity and beyond

He was coming right , he just had to ruin  
it . I laugh through my tears wiping them  
off

Me : stop that's enough I will marry you

JJ : yes

How is he even involved ?

JJ : don't look at me like that , I drove all

the way from Camps Bay bringing that ring here

Me : fine got it

TJ slides the ring on my ring finger , it's a bit tight . Only because I had a reaction of some sort

But my body will go down , and get to its normal size . My ring will fit me fine

TJ : your father is going to kill me

Me : at least you know

We laugh

Me : have you told your parents ?

TJ : no , I think we should just surprise them when we go home tomorrow . And you can call your parents then , they all meet the babies

Me : okay

JJ : they are so going to have a heart attack

Me : Jayden Junior Ngwenya

JJ : ah don't start with that

They hate just being called with their full names

Me : do they have names ?

And I want them to take their fathers surname , I know we're not married and all

But I don't want to mislead these kids , they need to know who they are . And their father is their identity , more than they are mine



TJ : Londisizwe and Nozizwe

Can't believe even my boy has a name ,  
thought he'll be nameless for a while

Me : and what does that mean ?

JJ : protector of nations and mother of  
nations

Me : that's all power

They laugh

TJ : I hope you have names for them

Me : London and Paris

It's the looks I get , and I can't help but pull a straight one

TJ : you're really naming our kids that ?

Me : yes

JJ : white people and drama ,  
congratulations on the engagement I'll  
take my leave with my nephew here

He walks to the couch and sits down

TJ : it's not a joke ?

Me : no

I want to laugh , but I won't

TJ : London and Paris wow

That's shade addressed to me

.

.

.

.

\*Sambulo\*

Women are crazy , like they break things with you and then expect you to run after them

I've been running after her for years and years , and well I'm tired now

I can't even pretend , I'm so done doing that . I won't be running after her this time around

I wake up with such a banging head , not even the remedies the girls nanny made for me helped

I just had one too many , and yeah . She opted to sleep the night , since I was drunk

She always goes out of her way to accommodate my girls , even when it's out of her boundary

I walk down and find them having breakfast , I sit down

Lizzy : you didn't take it did you ?

I just shake my head

Lizzy : but you asked for it

Me : yeah okay , not so loud . I know I did , but I couldn't down it

She shakes her head and continues eating

Me : morning girls

Them : morning daddy

I pour myself a glass of water

Lizzy : your phone has been ringing like crazy , you left it in the lounge last night

Me : who's been calling ?

Me : Doesn't have a name , but it's a number from Botswana

I seriously need to block that one , she's becoming a pest to me now

I need to heal and move on from her , she can't be blowing my phone like we're still a thing

.

\*INSERT 34\*

\*Sambulo\*

My sister has become quite a regular visitor , and it's good



Because the girls love it when she's around , and well I'm always happy to seeing her

Ledi : where are my girls ?

I pour myself a cup of coffee , she's only sitting down and hasn't even greeted me

Ledi : and Lizzy ? I haven't seen her in a while , don't tell me you fired her as well

Me : she took the girls to the park

Ledi : oh that's nice

Me : mhm

I sit down

Ledi : you holding up good ?

Me : yes , I just wish Princess can leave me alone

She laughs

Ledi : Tyler tells me you went out together

Me : is there anything that man doesn't tell you ?

She shrugs her shoulders

Me : it's like you've fed him something

Ledi : unfortunately mother died without even teaching me one herb

Me : it's mostly mothers in-law who teaches daughters such

She laughs her eyes popped out

Ledi : Royalty was just a darling of a woman

Me : mhm

She grabs my cup of coffee and drinks it

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

We're going home today , all packed and ready to leave

JJ and TJ sure think about everything , the babies car seats

I never even thought about that , but we're sorted and leaving

JJ is driving , while I'm in the back seat with my babies

TJ seems to be lost in his own thoughts , I wonder if all is well with him

JJ : I hope aunt doesn't have a heart attack

Me : can you stop with that

JJ : you two left , going to a resort . You come back with two babies , now that's a hell of a shock

I laugh slightly

JJ : but nonetheless they'll be happy

Me : I hope so

TJ : I hope your father doesn't kill me for real

So that's what has him worried

Me : he said we should live , and well we're all alive right

TJ : I've asked you to marry me , he might just be against the idea

Me : I don't think your father will like it too

JJ : you two have been dealt a raw deal ,  
your father's are insane

Us : let them hear you say that

Okay !

JJ : that's creepy , since when do you talk  
at the same time ? Saying the same thing

TJ : happens , can happen to anyone

Sure can

.

.



\*Tyler Jnr\*

We arrive at home , and we arrive at the same time with my mother

I wonder where she's coming from , and alone without my father

JJ : do we get out or what ?

Me : can your aunt just go inside

They laugh

JJ : let me go work my magic on her

Already she's looking at us , she's surprised yes . We can't get out of the car

She has to meet the babies inside , JJ walks out and goes to her

Bia : let me call my parents

Me : I hope your father softens when he sees them , and forgets about killing me

She laughs

Bia : it's another thing , to see the babies. And another to hear we're engaged

Me : yeah , I'm just having it rough

JJ walks inside the house with my mother , and this is our cue . After a while he comes out

I help Bia out of the car , JJ and I take the babies . Bia is video calling her parents

We walk inside and my mother is still by the lounge , the shock on her face

But it's tears before the smile , and she just can't hold herself calling my father

He comes down running , this man is whipped when it comes to his wife

Dad : what....whoa !

He's taken aback , and his facial expression is priceless . We caught him off guard

He didn't even get a chance to hide it well , and on the phone it's Bia's parents

Her mother is also tearing up , I just hear her voice . And it's a good thing I can't see his father's face

She has the phone focused on the babies and not on us

Mom : there's....there's two

I've never seen her this emotional

Mrs Ferrari : how did...and you didn't even tell us anything ?

Bia : we wanted to surprise you

Mom : well mission accomplished , we're surprised alright . And oh they look like you two

More like their mother , and took slightly from me

Mrs Ferrari : they're so cute , I can just eat them up

I would rather she doesn't

JJ : the men are speechless

He whispers next to me I chuckle , they really are . And I'm sure they're happy

Mom : oh we're grannies

Mrs Ferrari : and so young for this

They laugh , this is one happy moment . I wonder how it would have been like , if they were here

Mom takes Paris , and my baby girl is fast asleep alright . She loves sleeping this one

So yeah Bia wasn't pulling one on me , she really named the babies London and Paris

I thought maybe she'll choose something like Gabriel and Isabella , but Nah she wasn't having any of it



Dad : what's their names , they must have names right ?

See he's happy

Me : Londisizwe and Nozizwe , their mother named them London and Paris

I say annoyed , I don't like those names at all . But I'm happy , glad and proud . They took my surname , and for some reason I went for Oceans than Manzini

Because even I use both surnames , with Manzini being the first

Mom : those are nice names

Mine I'm sure she means

King Ferrari : you did good Oceans , and not only did I get my granddaughter and daughter alive . But there's a grandson as well

Okay , it's official the men are just as happy . They just fail to express that

And I might as well ruin it right now

Me : uhm there's something , we need to tell you

All eyes on me now , I look at my woman and shame she looks scared

Me : I asked Bia to marry me , and she said yes

It goes quite , you can even hear a needle when it drops

- 
- 
- 
-

\*INSERT 35\*

\*Bianca\*

Seconds ago , everyone was happy .  
Even the fathers , although they weren't  
showing it

And now everyone has gone silence ,  
and it's very much awkward

I don't know , if it was right of us to tell  
them now about the engagement now

Maybe we should have waited , and let  
them have their happy moment

TJ : I already gave her two kids , and  
that's not the only reason I want to  
marry her . I can't marry her only  
because of them , because it would be a  
completely different thing . And I can't  
say no what man will marry her with two  
kids ? Because that is very much

possible. And any man who will get to marry her , would be the luckiest man ever

Isn't he just sweet ? Now I see why I fell in love with him , this is the very same guy

Who booked a flight to Italy just to see me , and he didn't even know me

We hadn't even exchanged two words to each other , but he booked the flight anyway

Because I was ignoring him , and even I responded to him . It didn't change anything

He still came to see me , I ignored him for three days and still he didn't give up until he saw me

TJ : king Ferrari I know I might have gone about things the wrong way , I should have asked for your permission and blessings first . And for that I am sorry , and I will do anything to get your forgiveness and blessings . I love your daughter very much , this is the woman who has given me life and a purpose .

Now I have a reason to get my life in order , and people to care for . I have made her a mother , now I want to make her a wife . I've already started on the wrong foot , now I want to make things right

Wow , see I'm the only one getting emotional by his words

Mrs Manzini : it's hormones

They laugh with my mother , and it eases the mood a bit



Dad : when those kids turn a month , I want my kids home Oceans

What kind of a saying is that ? He's not even saying anything about his proposal

Dad : I love you princess , take care of those kids of mine

Me : I love you too father

And it's back to the silence , we have strange parents . My babies are yet to see things

Mr Oceans : you really want to make me and Ferrari in-laws TJ , like really ?

He finishes me off , alright . And see them both walking away . Mr Oceans leaving with his grandson

TJ : okay and that's that

Mrs Manzini : they're just grumpy

Mom : they'll be fine , you're already parents . At 17 and 20 , but are you both ready for marriage because now that's a lifetime thing . I made mistakes , got

married and divorced . That's not what I need for you both , I support this . And I give you both my blessings , but assure me that this is what you want . And that you'll stand the tests of time , and overcome anything . Marriage is a life time commitment , be ready to take and endure all the good and the bad . Now it's up to you , whether you have more goods than the bad . Just no divorce , you two are young . Very young , and this is a huge step . Think it through , and if you feel and see that you can stand it . Come back let me know , and you'll have my full support . That you already have now , you've proven to have matured during this time . Having those babies all

on your own , with no interference from us the parents . With the same commitment , you can make marriage work . Let it not be a spur of the moment thing , let your all and everything be in it as well

Mrs Manzini : I couldn't agree with you more , and either way I know your father's are proud of you both

I guess in a way we do have those blessings

- 
- 
-

\*Tyler Jnr\*

Honestly we spent the night like we have no kids , we didn't feel like new parents

My parents took the babies from us , and the two didn't even bother being hungry middle of the night

I thought they would wake us up , but nothing . We slept throughout the whole night

And we've been up for an hour now , and still no knock nothing

Bia : I miss my kids

I laugh

Bia : they're traitors

Me : I feel replaced alright , I don't think my father was attached to me like that

Bia : they're a few days old , don't be that parent . And hey , I think your father will outgrow this fever of his

Me : I doubt

After he walked out on us yesterday , he's been with Londi . And only brought him back to feed

After that he took them both , away and that was the last time we saw them

Me : I don't even feel like a parent right now

Bia : your jealousy is cute , I wish you held the same for me

Me : don't go there , remember how I almost got arrested in Italy

She laughs , and I don't think this is a thing to laugh about

Bia : you're just jealous to see me with any other men

Me : you're my girl , no man should even be closer to you



I was so annoyed , a whole fucking  
soccer start busy getting comfortable  
with my girl

Bia : we owe each other this much  
loyalty now

I nod , she's right

Me : I've gotten my shit in order now ,  
no more fucking around

Bia : reminds me we're engaged , but we  
haven't gotten back together

I laugh , not that nonsense again

Me : we do a lot of things , still not back together . So yeah , why not be engaged and get married still not together

Bia : you're strange

She should tell that to her father

Bia : but I love you

Me : see me loving you much more

Bia : much more than any shit we can ever go through ?

Me : yeah , and your mother's words my girl . Damn that woman sure is a queen , I felt every bit of it . And I'm so fucking invested and determined to make this work

A slight knock at the door , really they knock in our room now ?

Bia : go open

I sigh and get off the bed , I put on my sweatpants and open the door . And it's my mother with the two prodigal babies

Me : what ?

She laughs , and they have hands in their mouths

Mom : don't be like that

Me : it's okay to desert and forget your parents , and when hunger strikers you remember them ?

Mom : as if they had a choice being taken

Me : your husband though

Mom : he's your father , let them eat . I'll make Bia some porridge and rooibos tea. It'll help her produce enough milk

Me : okay thanks

I take the two from her , and the smile on their mothers face

Me : why are you even happy to see them ?

She laughs

Bia : you're so sour

She takes Londi , and they're already changed . We're seriously not parents

Bia : samponani , yaphila ? Yathatha  
Khulu yena abantana heh (hello , are you good ? Grandfather takes the kids)

She kisses her all over the face , and this one just wants to eat her

Me : you never speak Zulu with me

Bia : because I am not good in it

Me : but you can speak baby Zulu with them

She laugh , breastfeeding Londi

Bia : your jealousy issues are so not ready to be a father

Me : I don't think the kids are supposed to be hearing such things about me

I walk to the window with Nozi , these babies are messing with my sanity and mind

.

.

.

.

\*Tuscan Kingdom\*



The king is holding the young Prince ,  
while the twins are having breakfast

And he's happy , because for once Leo is  
eating and not making a fuss

Queen Mbali : is he not eating ?

She's holding the young Prince's bowl of  
cereal

King Ciro : I think he's hungry too

He hands him to her , she sits down and  
feeds him

The queen can see the worry on the king's face , and she knows that he's not okay

Queen Mbali : you're worried about her?

King Ciro : you know I'm right , she should be back home

Queen Mbali : I know , but the twins are only 3 days old . They're not ready to be traveling

He sighs

King Ciro : I know

She looks at him

Queen Mbali : and what do you think  
about the engagement ?

King Ciro : what am I supposed to think  
about it ?

He's so rude and arrogant she laughs it  
off

Queen Mbali : above everything and all ,  
that Oceans boy loves your daughter .  
And your daughter is in love with him

He knows she's right , he saw it himself

King Ciro : trying to separate them will  
only result in them hating us

The queen smiles

King Ciro : I can't believe I'm about to  
say this , but he can marry her

Queen Mbali : of course he can , and  
now you need to talk to your daughter .  
And tell TJ he can marry her

King Ciro : must I ?

Queen Mbali : not a must no , but you  
should

She's so amused by the whole situation ,  
it's funny how their own kids brought  
them together . Oceans apart , and the  
two fell in love . And now enemies of  
generations are about to be in-laws

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

JJ has taken over the grandparents duty now , he's the one with the babies

Now I know bringing kids to a house full of people doesn't work

My uncle is also on his way , and I know those cousins of mine

They will be crowing the babies , and it  
just won't end

I had a call from Ntsika this morning ,  
just him checking in on us

And that was just something new from  
him , I did not even expect

He's been good to us , me and my family  
that much I cannot deny

Dad : let's have a talk

Okay , a talk with him can never be a good thing

Nonetheless I follow him , and we get to the kitchen

Dad : you really want to marry Ferrari's daughter ?

The sooner the better so she can be an Oceans , and he will stop saying Ferrari's daughter



Me : yes dad , I love her and I do want to marry her . I've never been so sure of anything

Dad : alright , your grandfather wants to talk to you . Give him a call when you can

I nod , he walks out with a pat on my shoulder . Awkward right ?

I call my grandfather and after just a few rings he answers

Baba : my son

Me : unjani baba ? (How are you father)!

Baba : I cannot complain , I heard you've made me a great grandfather now

We laugh

Me : unfortunately I did

Baba : I'm proud of you , and in just a few days I will be coming to see them

Me : it would be nice to see you

And it would be for real , I haven't seen  
in for a quite a while now

Baba : there's nothing much , I just  
wanted to let you know I'll be coming .  
And we can talk better in person

There's still some in person talks as well?  
I hope it's not about the Ferrari's again

I will die , and nothing they say or do will  
change my mind

Me : alright baba

Baba : let's talk again soon

Me : take care

We hang up , and now I'm worried . Just a bit , hopefully my father didn't send him on me

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 36\*

\*Ntsika\*

I'm finally home to see my father , I have no idea after how long . I don't even know , or how I managed to get here this time around

Most times , I just drive by and don't bother coming in . Others I just stop by

the gate , while others I make a U-turn  
before I'm even close by

But today here I am , and right now I  
wish my feet can carry me outside the  
gate

I don't want to be here , like I really  
don't . I hate being here , I despise this  
place with my every being

It reminds me of everything I hate , how  
I suffered . All the abuse , the hurt and  
pain . It's just a fucking reminder of a  
fucked up messed past , that I prefer it  
stays there

Dad : when you.....

Me : can we just talk about why I'm here  
and nothing else

Dad : still the same old...

Me : yes , and I don't intend to change  
anytime soon

He chuckles annoyed

Dad : ever wondered why I was only  
given you as a child ?

Me : why would I even dare wonder such ? And shouldn't you be asking your wife that instead of me ?

Dad : you're so fucking ungrateful , there's nothing I didn't give you . There's nothing I didn't do for you , and you failed me as a son . You couldn't put your fucking ego and pride aside , and just give me the one thing I needed . Do you know how much you ruined me ?

Me : why am I here ?

Dad : any kid out there would die and give anything , I mean anything to be a



child of mine . But what did I get , a whole you that's just fucking useless . When will you grow up , get over it . You will hold that hate towards me until when ? You're fucking old for this nonsense

Me : you fucking slept with my fiancée , no once not twice . She exposed you for the pervert that you are , and you killed her . And you think I'll let that go ?

I'm on the verge of breaking down , but the damn walls I've built around myself

Dad : that was years ago , this hate just can't be healthy for you

I swear one day I will kill my father with my own hands

He's not even fucking remorseful of what he did . My mother walks in , and I get up . I hate her more than I even hate this pathetic man of hers

I just don't get why she doesn't die , every month she's in and out of hospitals . Why doesn't she just die

Mom : Ntsika my son....

I head towards the door

Dad : you walk out of that door and...

Me : and what ? You and your millions  
don't scare me , come after me . And I'll  
fuck you up so bad , she'll mourn you .  
And let's hope while at that , she'll do us  
all a favour and follow your pathetic self

I walk out and head to my car , I  
shouldn't have come here

It's always the same thing over and time  
and again

How do you get over the fact that your  
father raped your fiancée , and she kept  
quite about it

Right under your nose , and when she  
finally told he killed her

Fuck those two broke me , including my  
mother . Who knew what her husband  
was doing , but she was the one who  
threw around threats

I want nothing with them , now I can't  
even bring myself to be devoted to a  
woman

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*Princess\*

Really when it rains it pours , for the first  
time in a week I walked around the  
village today

And the finger pointing , the stares . And  
the gossip , that's accompanied by  
laughs

People weren't even hiding , they just  
showed me exactly how much I've lost  
value in this kingdom

No one respects me as queen anymore ,  
it is said crops are dying . Livestock is  
slowly disappearing , and being found by  
the river dead

Now that's a sacred river , a home for  
the fallen queens such things shouldn't  
be found there

This means I'm deserted as a queen ,  
what I fail to understand is what I did  
wrong ?

I'm here to see the seer , not that he can  
help me much

He hasn't been able to do any of that as  
of late , he's just become pretty much  
useless to me to be honest

But as a queen very worried , and  
concerned for the well-being of my  
people and my kingdom

He's the one person I can talk to , and  
yes so it's a must that I do so

Me : my Kingdom is in shambles and  
ruins , things are burning out there and  
I'm feeling the heat from the throne

He's just looking at me saying nothing

Me : what are the fallen queens saying  
about this ? And how can it be rectified ?  
Surely there must be something that can  
be done



Rapulana : my queen I think you already know where the problem lies

Not today no , I'm not in the moods to entertain him and his riddles at all

Me : and do you think if I knew or had the slightest idea I would be here ?

Rapulana : the fallen queens are no longer communicating with you

He knows that ? But how , I mean there's no way that he's powerful than me . Well than how I was ?

But could there be such betrayal against one of their own blood ? That they would expose me to an outsider

Rapulana : your reign has taken its course , and your time has come

Me : no !

Rapulana : it's time now for the regent of the next queen to rule , until the queen has come of age and is ready

Me : I said no !

I raise my voice louder than before , now I'm angry . The birth of that child has ruined me

And I will be damned if I just roll over and die , I will not accept defeat and not in this manner

This is my throne , I was born for this . I gave my life away for it , and now I have nothing . Absolutely nothing but this

Rapulana : The more you remain on this throne , the more the anger of fallen you will be bringing upon you

Me : you don't understand , this throne is my life . This is all I know , without this throne I am nothing . And you expect me to give it all up ?

Rapulana : not so long ago my queen , you were ready to give up everything even this throne that you so claim today. For a man you wanted to marry and your heart desired . And for that reason you were deemed to have finished your course , and were released of your duties and gift .

I feel like I'm losing my mind right now all this like all of this for a fucking man

that I don't even have right now ?

Me : but here I am , I choose this throne  
over him again

He shakes his head

Rapulana : the second you showed your  
willingness , you sealed your fate with  
the queens

I get up

Me : what you just told me is utter  
nonsense , absolutely utter nonsense

and rubbish . Now hear me well , if this is some kind of a plot against me . You will regret it so bad , I will ruin you to the core

I walk out heading to my hut

Voice : my queen

I can hear someone calling behind me , I ignore the voice until he just jumps in front of me

Tiro : my queen

Me : what do you want ?

He's taken aback by my rudeness

Tiro : I...I just wanted to check on you  
and if all is well

Me : well I'm fine , get out of my way

He moves out , and I continue my walk .  
Feelings slightly bad for being rude to  
him

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

Motherhood , I don't even know how that feels like . Unless it's feeding time

Which is just crazy , these kids are never with me like never

15 minutes with them alone , is enough .  
Mr Oceans is always with them



You won't believe he even took leave , I  
heard he owns his own company

So yeah perks of being a big boss , so  
he's always with them day and night

And he's back to changing diapers , he  
doesn't even mind doing that

I feel so useless as a mother to be  
honest , I always have nothing to do

So I've decided to use this time , and just  
focus on my school work

It's not like I have anything else to do ,  
so why not do something useful

I feel like we're just being too spoilt , and  
I never thought we would receive this  
kind of treatment

I guess I'll carry the cross hard when I  
have to go back home

My mother has a baby herself , I doubt  
she would be much helpful to mine

Not that she won't help , she will where  
she can though . That much I know

I'm on call with Nana , she finally got to see the babies this morning when I video called her

She's only been receiving pictures only , and it was really just nice of her seeing them

Nana : how are you holding up ?

Me : just fine , trying to catch up with school though . And it's a lot

Nana : but are you coping ?

Me : so far yes

Nana : that's good right ?

Me : not as bad as I thought it would be ,  
so yes

Nana : adjusting to being a mother ?

I laugh

Me : I don't even feel like a mother , I  
sometimes even forget the kids . They're  
always with their grandfather

She laughs now

Nana : joys of being a grandparent

Me : you should come see them

Nana : why don't you bring them ?

Me : in three weeks we would be going home , father insisted . And I've been here for far too long , I'm sure he wants me home when the year ends

Nana : I would come along to Italy , than invade your in-laws home like that

My grandmother though

Me : okay Nana , it would be nice yes to have someone to travel with . And I'm sure father will be sending the jet , instead of just taking a flight

Nana : your father and standards

Me : he's a king , and besides . I'll be travelling with kids , so it would be much easier that way

Nana : okay , we will talk soon again . I

don't want to take much time of your school work

Me : I love you

She smiles

Nana : I love you too baby , and congratulations on the engagement

I laugh , at least she's accepted this with open arms . Unlike some people that are just better left off unsaid . But the marriage is happening , so yeah all is well

**\*INSERT 37\***

**\*TWO WEEKS LATER\***

**\*Bianca\***



TJ is suddenly in moods , but besides his moods all has been well

Both in school and just life , my tutor is very much happy and impressed by my work

So I'm glad and proud of myself about that one , because it has been quite rough on me

But I seem to have pulled through just fine , despite everything else

But now that all that is done , and the year has come to an end

I'm just looking forward to everything and anything else coming on the next one

My babies are growing , and so healthy . Like I have nothing to be worried about

Okay maybe just tiny one little thing , the fact that TJ's grandfather and his aunt and uncle are coming . He was supposed to have come a while back , but his health wasn't so good

And so his trip this side had to be postponed , but now in just a few days they're said to be coming

Maybe I have no reason to be worried about , but I just can't help myself

Even though TJ tried assuring me that his grandfather is a good chilled person

I just find that very hard to believe , I mean my father doesn't like him . And for a reason I am sure . And you can just imagine how my father reacted when I mentioned that to them

He wanted to be on the next flight to South Africa right away

Let's thank my mother and her sane mind , I only have a week left and I'm leaving

Which is why TJ is moody and sulking , the fact that I am leaving . He's not happy about that

But there's nothing I can do about it , our second Christmas and we won't even be together . I know he so badly wanted to be with the kids , but I really don't want to anger my father

If I had my way , I would stay some more. But I won't lie , I also miss home like crazy

I miss my boys so much , and I haven't even met my younger brother physically

I feel robbed when it comes to that one

But all in all , all has been well this side .  
And we have no complaints

Mr Oceans is back at work , and Mrs Manzini tries to go to work when she can

At least now , we have time with the babies . And I feel like they've started knowing who is dad and mom

That pleases my heart , the grandparents replaced us and we felt it

At least 3 times a week we get to sleep with them , I'm slowly understanding being a mother

But they're also not so bothersome , like Nozi is always asleep half the time . And when Londi is up , he's just playing with air . Until he's worn out and he sleeps

It's hard to even believe that these are  
the same babies , that were bothering  
me

Because now , they're just sweethearts .  
They don't even know how to cry , which  
I find funny

Like I cry , I know how to cry and I cry .  
But they hardly even make sounds

If you're not paying attention you'll miss  
that they're crying , and not playing .  
Because that's just how they sound .  
You'll know they're crying if you're  
looking at them , and you see tears

running on the side of the face . Like  
right now , my poor baby just wants to  
sleep . And do what she does best

But TJ is not letting her , this is really  
child abuse at its best and cutest

Me : can you just let her sleep please

TJ : she's always sleeping , when do we  
get a time to be with her ?

Me : when she wants , and now she  
wants to sleep



TJ : it won't even take her a second to fall asleep

Me : she would like to sleep right now , when she wants not when you feel like letting her please

He puts her down

Me : thank you , I can use all the rest I can get . Who knows maybe they're just like this , because you're here . And when we leave they'll show me their true colours

He smiles , clearly amused and happy by what I just said

TJ : which is why you shouldn't go

Me : forget it , it's not happening I am leaving . And if they cause me a headache , I'll send them back

TJ : without you ?

It's his expression that kills me

Me : yes alone

TJ : but....wow

It's a wow indeed , because I don't know  
how I'll cope

.

.

.

.

\*Ntsika\*

After going home , I swore I'm never  
going back there again

My father has called countless times ,  
telling me my mother is sick and all that

Because it's nothing new , I don't care .  
Like I really don't care what happens  
with either both of them

So I've been burying myself in work , just  
to make sure that I don't self destruct

That's just how much my parents rattle  
me , especially my father and he knows  
it . Which is why I think , he just loves it  
when I'm rattled and fighting him

Lwazi : the shipment from Congo arrived

Me : everything safe ?

Lwazi : as far as I know , all is well

Me : good , young Oceans will take of it

Lwazi : you're trusting him , with black diamonds that are worth Billions....

Me : we're men and not highschool boys, your problem is suddenly with my leadership in my business . Or its with young Oceans ?

I know exactly what his problem is , but I want to hear it from him

Lwazi : I have no....

Me : before you lie to me , just think about it first

He sighs

Lwazi : this boy has been working for you, just merely a few a months , and already you've gone and given him so much power

Me : he's good at what he does , and he's fucking loyal . In this business loyalty works marvellous things , and I Ntsika Dlamini I always pay up a loyal man

I get up

Me : sort yourself out , because you basically have no place here . Unless you can hold a pistol , fight men with guns . Hate on useless people , for no reason . And of course have a heart of steel like he does

I leave him defeated like that

\*Sambulo\*

I've had quite a few talks with my sister about the girls mothers

I couldn't ignore that topic forever , because one day they were going to ask again . And I needed a way to deal with this , before it even gets there again



And my sister advised that I sit them down , and try to explain this mother situation

I'm slowly getting there , this is part of me being a father and them growing up

Just few days ago , along with my sister . We went to Manzini Kingdom

To my mothers grave , and I could tell they were slowly getting it . That granny is gone and is an angel to them . So I have no doubt , that maybe step by step they will understand the mother's issue

Lizzy : I will leave now

She's been one hell amazing of help as well , she has gone out of her way to cater for my kids

I don't even know how to thank her , and I've given her a raise . Which she wasn't so happy about

Lizzy : ohm....is everyone okay with you ?  
You just zoned out on me

Me : yeah ...I'm fine

Lizzy : okay , see you Monday

She walks towards the door

Me : uhm please wait

I say as fast as I can as she holds the door handle , she turns and looks at me

Me : uhm....are you in a hurry home ?

She's quite lost

Me : like is there a reason for you for be leaving like right now , right away ?

She smiles laughing , Lizzy is beautiful I won't lie , I won't take her beauty away from me

She's just one petite dark brown skinned woman , with sparking brown eyes

She's quite something , but I've never looked at her like that . Like ever , and she's been around since Paballo was 2 years old . And that's when Thuto was born

So it's been a whole 7 years with us , and she's just been amazing to them and me

Lizzy : is there anything you want to ask?

Me : more like say

Lizzy : okay....

Me : would you like to go grab something to eat , anywhere you want and like

Lizzy : like out ?

Me : yes

She looks down for a second and looks back at me

Me : Ledi has taken the girls for the night, I'm not in the mood to get cooking. And you're tired , you've been busy all day . I'm sure one supper meal , will fix both of us

She laughs

Lizzy : why don't I just cook ?

See me , I'm very fast in learning and

understanding . I get up and grab my car keys and jacket

That was a yes to me , so I don't see why we should be wasting time

Me : let's go

Lizzy : but.....

Me : the plan is to go out , relax let people you don't know serve you

She laughs , I take her hand walking out heading to my car

\*INSERT 38\*

\*Camps Bay CPT\*

Tyler is with his grandkids , making them watch videos on YouTube



He's just amused by the fact that ,  
they're laying down on the stomachs .  
And looking like they're seeing what  
they're watching

Ledi walks in , and she captures the  
moment in a short video on her phone

Then kisses her husband , and she sits  
down next to him

Ledi : I'm so thankful for them , it's like  
they've given you another reason to just  
look at life in a different way

He smiles

Tyler : they're keeping me sane right now

Ledi : a lot going on in your mind right now ?

He heaves a slight sigh

Tyler : a lot

Ledi : you want to share ?

Tyler : this marriage , the fact that TJ has to be king

Ledi : please just accept this marriage , for all our sakes and sanity

Tyler : I'm just scared for them , they're young and bound to make mistakes . I just don't want TJ making the same mistakes I made with you

She holds his hand

Ledi : and here we're today , isn't that what matters ?

Tyler : there were points in life where I almost lost you , difference you stuck with me

Ledi : and you don't think Bianca is capable of the same ?

He sighs taking a second to think his answer

Tyler : she's Tue enemy's daughter , and I tell you there's nothing Ferrari would love seeing more than them breaking up. And if TJ fucks up , he will make sure his daughter is gone . Now that he cannot

handle , he loves this girl way so fucking much

Ledi : which is why I think we should let them , I believe and trust in our son . He knows what's at stake , and he will tread carefully . I can assure you that

He smiles nodding , who will speak sense to him all the time if not his sweetheart

Ledi : and as for him being king , I don't want to say much about that . But like I said I trust and believe in him

Tyler : I will stand with him at all times

Ledi can see just how much he means that , and it gives her some kind of assurance that TJ will be safe taking the throne

.

.

.

.

\*Princess\*

I'm just not myself , and it doesn't help  
with everything going around me

Loosing my throne , over a man I don't  
even have right now

And I'm very much convinced , that  
Sambulo has moved on with his life

There's no way he would just ignore me  
the way he's been doing

Unless there's someone else , and I  
won't even say he's been cheating  
because he's not

If he was cheating , the attention would have been less on me that much I know

So it's a recent thing , we just break up and he's already on the next pussy

He's blocked my new number , so I can't even text him . And getting another number

Would make me look so desperate and unlady like

Who knows maybe I'll get to see him , when I get to South Africa



I didn't even want to go there , but my father insisted on it

And after doing some thinking , I just figured that maybe this is what I need

Going there seeing that baby myself, maybe there'll be a way to change this absurd fate of theirs

Me : Tiro

I took a whole walk to the fields just to see him , I really felt so bad after being rude to him the other day

Me : please can we have a word ?

There's stares already , and I know after  
this I'll be talk of the village

Tiro : my queen

Me : how are you ?

I do my best to smile , just to make him  
comfortable

Tiro : can't complain

It's accompanied by a head shake

Me : I see , well I'm well myself

He says nothing , he has his head bowed down

Me : I just want to say I am sorry about the other day , you really caught me at a bad time yes . But it doesn't excuse me being rude like that to you , so I'm really sorry

Tiro : not a problem my queen , and next time please don't ever feel the need to degrade yourself and apologize to a commoner

Wow that hits

Tiro : can I take my leave ?

I nod , I can't even utter words out . He walks back to his work

And I don't know why , but damn I'm bothered by his words

Tiro is one guy that's always been good to me , ever since I came here . I think he has some kind of a crush on me , well maybe he did but surely not anymore

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

Seeing Bia packs , just kind of seals this thing . In just two days she's leaving

I'm not ready for that , like I don't want her to go I really don't . I don't see how I'm going to survive , seeing my family across the screen

Not being able to touch them , kiss my kids . This is just going to be hard no lie

Me : uBaba will be arriving today  
(grandfather)

I don't even want to talk about her leaving , because it just gives me slight depression

And it's awkward just looking at each other , and not saying anything to each other . So I better just talk about something else , cause this is killing me

Bia : I'm really scared to be meeting your grandfather

Me : there's nothing to be scared of , he's a better version of my father

She smiles

Bia : and I guess you're the worst version of both

I've heard that before

Me : not really no , I'm the sweetest you know that

Bia : me and you really need to talk ?

Okay the tone and mood has changed now . I wonder what did I do now

Me : okay

Bia : I'm leaving

Me : and I hate that

She raises her brow , and it's just making her so cute

Me : what ? I won't lie about it



Bia : I don't know when is the next time  
I'll be seeing you again

That gives my heart pains

Bia : TJ please , remember now that I'm  
not just some girlfriend to you . I'm the  
mother of your kids and your fiancée ,  
can that please just give me some loyalty  
from you . If lust gets too much ,  
subscribe to a porn site . I won't deal  
with cheating again , and this is the last  
time I say this . I hate questioning  
myself, because of your doings

I'm not being reminded of the past here,  
it's not being thrown in my face

She's just putting it out there , so I know  
if I mess up then it's all on me

And I hear her well , I'm working on  
myself . She's been around , maybe  
that's why I've been loyal

Who knows I won't mess up when she  
leaves , that's why I say I'm working on  
myself . I don't need to be repeating ,  
mistakes of the past

.

\*INSERT 39\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I have never seen my grandfather so  
proud like he is right now

The man just took one look at Lindo and he was just like “but this is me”

And my princess , has everyone wrapped around her little pinkie

But it's the sleeping a lot , it just makes it so much more cuter

One minute she's awake looking at you , and the next she's fast asleep

I don't think that's normal , she just makes it funny . I just hope she's not a tired baby

Baba : son let's have a word

See me and my father following him ,  
mind you he's talking to me

But I guess my father wants to be part of  
the conversation as well

We walk outside to the lawn , and being  
in the middle of these two is just scary

Baba : when your father came home a  
while back , we had a talk . And I believe  
even now , he still hasn't told you  
anything

Me : oh ?

Baba : your uncle wants to step down the throne , because he has no heir that can take over after him

Okay that's new , and I had no idea for real

Baba : I fought for that throne , blood sweat and tears . And I won't just sit by , and watch it all go to shambles . Your father can't take the throne at his age , but you can

Me : what ...me ?

I did not even think about this , not even once . Because my father told me exactly why he wasn't king

And I knew that I will never be one too , I made peace with that and now this

Dad : either you take the throne , or its lefty vulnerable

The look on my grandfather when my father says that

And I can already just imagine myself as a king , I chuckle to myself

Dad : something amusing ?

Me : I'm just imagining myself as a king

They chuckle

Dad : so you agree ?

Me : does uncle know about this ?

Dad : yes



I'm sure he's not happy at all

Me : I still need to talk to Bia about this , we're engaged now . And she needs to know , what now being married to me means . Her being queen , we can't ignore the fact that she's a blue blood . She cannot be reduced to anything less than that

He sighs

Dad : and the Ferrari's keep getting elevated

He walks away , ubaba laughs

Me : what's the deal with those people ?

Baba : I killed Ferrari's father , and he took his revenge on your father

And he leaves me with that , just like that . After saying he killed Leonardo Ferrari , just like that

Yeah I have killed , and I'm sure I'll still kill some more . But fuck I still have a conscious , okay a slight of it but I still have it

\*Sambulo\*

My sister has invited me over to her place , she's having some kind of a braai

She told me , the grandfather is already there . He arrived yesterday

I'm so not looking forward to seeing him,  
and oh the king and queen twins will  
also be there

As much as I don't want to go there , my girls now love going there because of the twins

And I can't deny them that , it was this morning Thuto asked me to buy a baby

I didn't know we could buy those , if only it that was that easy I would

The problem is not the baby , but it's the whole process with the mother . I mean , I'm already raising two by myself . If we have another one , can the mother stick around this time around

Me : hi

I walk closer to her , she's busy washing the dishes . I don't even know why she bothers doing these things

Lizzy : I thought you're still out

Me : came back a while ago , you would have known that if you came with me

She laughs

Lizzy : unlike you I'm working here , and you pay me

Me : to watch my kids , not this

Lizzy : it doesn't kill , to always clean up  
after we make a mess

I give up , she always has an answer for  
everything

Me : Ledi invited us to her house , she's  
having a braai . You want to come with  
us ? Please do

She laughs

Lizzy : you and the girls ?

Me : yes

Lizzy : okay I'll come , but just know I won't be socializing I'll be watching them

I'll let her believe what she wants , because I know the second we arrive there

The girls will be hooked up on the twins , they won't be having time for us

So she'll be by my side , and I'll still get to spend my time with her

.

\*Princess\*

We decided to arrive together , Prince arrive before me . But he waited at the airport for me

So we can come here together , and it seems like a full house



There seem to be some kind of a barbecue going on , and everyone is here

Including Sambulo , I don't know how to feel about that

And the fact that , Tyler is married to his sister means we'll see each other whenever the family is together

Me : it's a full house

Prince : say that again

We walk closer and our father comes to us

Dad : and the king and queen finally grace us

Me : hi father

We smile hugging him

Dad : you too look good

Me : we take care of ourselves you know

Dad : yes , yes . Come let's join everyone

And the fact that there's someone next to Sambulo bores me to hell

And she looks so comfortable , and cosy with him . Have they no shame , in front of my father ?

We greet , and they greet back . Sambulo doesn't even seem bothered , by my being here and that hurts

Ledi welcomes me like I'm just a guest , and not a friend . I wonder what's that about ? But I let it slide , maybe she's still upset about her brother

The same brother that brought another woman here , has he no shame

Me : where are my kids ?

I say with a smile

TJ : probably sleeping

Me : what in this heat ?

Dad : the princess is always sleeping , it amazes me

Oh wow , is it now . Interesting to know

Me : well can I please go see them ?

TJ : I'll take you

We walk inside the house , along with  
Prince

Prince : I can't believe you're a father  
now

TJ just chuckles , just side eyeing Prince .  
Like he knows something , and so he'll  
rather not say anything but just smile

I wonder what , unless he knows that  
Prince can't have kids

Which means he already knows , the  
plans they have for him to take over the  
throne

Seems like my brother and I , owe  
ourselves a talk

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*INSERT 40\*

\*Bianca\*

To be honest Thuto and Paballo are something else . So Thuto tells me she wants her father to buy a baby , I'm like what ?

But I understand where she's coming from , I remember when Leo and Cero were born

I didn't want to be out of their sight , I just thought babies are the most cutest beings ever

So I do understand Thuto , seeing these two has given her baby fever

TJ walks in , and he's with that awkward aunt of his and another man . We're in the play room , and I feel like we've been disturbed right now . I'm not happy

TJ : my uncle and aunt wanted to see the babies



Me : mhm

I say with a fake smile , don't ask me  
why I don't know

TJ picks Nozi first and walks to his aunt

Princess : oh wow , she's so beautiful

He laughs

TJ : who's child is she ....

She places her tiny hand on her father's face , as he's about to hand her over to his aunt

And it's like the moment has been frozen for him , the rage I see on his face

His eyes turn red in an instant , I'm on my feet the quickest I can and I take my baby away from him

Princess : what....

TJ : get out , and I don't ever want to see you anywhere near my kids . I swear if

you touch even a hair on her , I will rip  
you to fucking pieces . Get out

I don't think I've ever seen anyone  
scared like his aunt is right now

And his uncle pulls her out , he just shuts  
the door the second they're out

He turns around , and blinks quite a few  
times and his eyes go back to their  
colour

These babies don't need to be around  
him right now , even I shouldn't be here

But he's my mess right

Me : girls come with me

TJ : leave the twins

His voice is calm now , but I tell you he's still furious

I put Nozi down , I know he can never hurt his own kids

I take Thuto and Paballo , we walk outside to where everyone is

And Princess is crying , uncle Sambulo  
looks so bored it's actually funny

Considering what TJ told me about  
them, I'm sure the man is like she's just  
being dramatic

Lizzy takes the girls from me

Prince : ask her , she was there she saw  
it

The nerve , what exactly did I see ?

Mrs Manzini : Bia what happened in the room baby ?

I act all so confused

Mr Oceans : where is TJ ?

Me : in the play room with the twins

Mr Oceans : I'll go see him...

Me : I'll rather you just leave him alone

Oh shit , the looks I get . I swallow saliva that's not even there

Me : what I meant is , he's putting the babies to sleep . And Lindo is restless , he'll come out when he's done

Prince : can you just tell everyone , how he went off at his aunt like a fucking animal . And kicked us out of the room

He's kidding me

Me : I can't tell people what I didn't see , I have absolutely no idea what you're talking about . Please excuse me

Mrs Manzini nods , and the look his father is giving me . I know he saw right through my lies

But a lie is not a lie to the other person , until you admit that you lied . And I'll never

Something triggered TJ to react that way, and until I know what . I'm on his side

Voice : will you be safe with him ?

I turn and it's JJ , he scared me there



Me : what ?

JJ : if he does something shout , I'll be near

He walks away , like he did not just get creepy with me . Or he knows the beast his cousin is

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I keep looking at her , and she's just  
staring back at me so innocently

Making slight baby sounds , playing with  
her hands and feet in the air

Tears are on the edge of falling down ,  
like I'm angry and hurt at the same time

Me : how did you do that ?

She shakes her head , and I wish she can  
just answer me right now . But it's  
impossible , yet she touched my face  
and I felt everything

The hate that my aunt holds for my child, that she's no longer queen of Batlokoa

The fallen queens have deserted her , because now a new queen is born

And in just a few years , my child will rule that Kingdom

And now that explains her reaction , the first time she saw Bia

Me : tell daddy sweetheart , how did you do that ?

I mean she's touched us many times ,  
but something like that has never  
happened before

Voice : what did she do ?

She says walking behind me , she places  
her hand on my back . I let the tear fall

And what do you know , it falls on my  
baby's cheek . She doesn't even get  
startled

Instead she smiles , and it's one cute  
smile ever

Me : how can one hate such a beautiful person ?

Bia : I don't understand what do you mean ?

Me : I'm not crazy

She nods , I move away to the window

Bia : papi please talk to me

Me : Princess is no longer queen at Batlokoa

Bia : your other kingdom in Botswana ?

Me : yes

Bia : o-kay

Me : our daughter has been chosen by  
the fallen queens to be the next queen  
in line

Bia : what ?

I know it's unbelievable , I still don't  
know how to explain all this

Me : just at the same time , I'm told I'm to be king at Manzini

Bia : you're what ?

She raises her voice , walking towards me now

Me : I was going to tell you , my father and his father just told me this . I didn't know

Bia : wait...wait you're just confusing me right now

Me : let's forget about me for a second , and just talk about our daughter . She touched my face , and I knew everything. Every intention and feeling Princess came here with , my 29 days old baby is a threat to her . And she doesn't want to forsaken the throne , even though she knows it's not hers anymore

Bia : are you saying your aunt wants to hurt my child ?

I chuckle

Me : I will kill her , before she even finishes up part of her plot . She has no



idea what she's started , poke me  
anywhere and everywhere , just not with  
my kids and their mother

I turn and face her , and okay a soft kiss  
on her forehead . I head towards the  
door

Bia : Papi no

She's comes after me and I lock the  
door, locking them inside

She doesn't even bother shouting nor  
banging the door

\*Sambulo\*

I'm so annoyed right now , I just want to leave right now

This whole show that's happening right now , is not my bottle of beer

Lizzy has taken the kids to the pool , now I'm thankful for her being here

Because now my kids are not exposed to this

Tyler : what exactly happened in there ?

He's annoyed as well , you just can't miss it

Prince : you should go ask your son , that boy fucking lacks respect

Tyler : you watch your mouth , and be the adult . I'm asking you

Princess : he....he was just so rude like.....

She cries again , this is not going  
anywhere . They're angry , but none can  
say what TJ did or said

And just then he comes out himself , I've  
never seen such . And I hope Lizzy stays  
where she is with my kids

Africa : Makoti (Daugherty in-law)

He says to Ledi

Ledi : if you Oceans and Manzini people  
have a thirst for blood , go do it away  
from my house . Tame your son , they're

your siblings . They provoked him , and he better not have a single scratch on him

Oh hell ! She says to Tyler more like roars at him , and she walks inside the house

Africa : son , I'm sure whatever happened we can talk about it

This boy , seems to have just grown over 7 feet tall . Don't get me started on his body , he looks and like steel

His eyes are blood shot red , like it's just pure blood

Nothing his father used to be , he's even scaring me alright

TJ : no one , and I mean no one threatens my kids over a fucking throne

Whoa what now ?

Tyler : what are you talking about ?

The veins on his forehead , he moves to his brother Prince

This father and son duo , is ready to be ripping people off right here right now

TJ : your sister here is forsaken by ancestors ...

Princess : no.....

It's the way she screams it , we know it's true

TJ : she's no longer queen at Batlokoa, because my daughter is the next queen . She knew this and kept quite about it , because she doesn't

want to accept defeat . She knew from when she was in her mothers womb , that she was pure . And that's why she kept her mother alive , and opposed her brother . She kept quiet , because she was hoping the beast would kill the pure blood . But it didn't happen , and now she's here to end my child . So she gets to keep the throne , the fucking throne that's no longer hers....

Princess : please stop.....just stop.....stop okay

This is another way to be exposed , and I cannot believe this right now



I never saw or imagined Princess to be evil or scheming and conniving like this

Africa : Princess !

The poor old man is defeated alright

Prince : you can't make such accusations, where is the proof to this nonsense . You should be ashamed of yourself , making your aunt cry like this . Have you suddenly grown balls now that you've been promised my throne ?

Wait , what's going on in this family

People are loosing their thrones and  
now half bloods are sitting on thrones ?

Babies are replacing old people , like  
what the fuck is going on in this family ?

I asked too soon , Prince swallows his  
words . When he's thrown so up high in  
the air right towards the wall , as he falls  
down his whole body mark is left on the  
wall

Africa : Tyler hold him !

And Tyler just looks at his son

Africa : just because I said I don't want you killing him , doesn't mean I want your son doing it

Tyler seems to be out of his sane mind , Prince is groaning like a wounded animal down on the flood

His crying sister runs and goes next to him , and I'm left like what the fuck just happened ?

- 
- 
- 
-

\*INSERT 41\*

\*Bianca\*

She's fast asleep , and you would swear she didn't just cause chaos with her tiny hands

Her type is indeed very dangerous ,  
because I've never seen TJ angry like  
that

And the fool locked me inside these  
room , with his babies

And they just look like all is well in their  
world , I've never been so confused in  
my life

I cannot wait for tomorrow and I leave , I  
don't need him killing people here . All  
because of this person of his , now he's  
fighting alone and she's asleep

Like she's not the one who started everything , I like someone who values their peace and my daughter takes the cup

That thud against the wall even felt like wall was cracking

I wonder what was that all about , but maybe I'm better off locked in here

Still doesn't mean I'm safe from beats and all , I'm just hoping and crossing fingers he doesn't kill anyone

A jail bird father is not what his kids needs , especially because he's doing criminal things

Voice : Bia

Oh just great

Me : ma (mom)

I sound as calm as I can ever be , I don't want to alarm her

Mrs Manzini : are you and the kids okay?

Oh they couldn't be better

Me : yeah we're fine

And why does she come for the door

Mrs Manzini : why is the door locked ?

I am answering for things I did not start now , as if I know about them

Me : I....well the key

I don't know what to say



Mrs Manzini : he locked you in here  
didn't he ?

Okay she doesn't sound angry or upset

Me : he....he did

She laughs

Mrs Manzini : as long as you're not  
suffocating in there

Me : oh we're fine

Mrs Manzini : shout if there's anything  
you need

Me : okay

I just wonder if this is a norm with these  
people or what

.

.

.

.

\*Princess\*

I'm like how the hell , was she able to show him these things ?

She's a baby for crying out loud , just a fucking baby

But damn she's a threat , and she's clearly my downfall

If it means that even this young , she's able to overpower me then I don't stand a chance

Voice : is it true ?

Not him no , I'm not ready to face him at all

Dad : everything that TJ said was it true ?

Me : I....I have no idea where he got that

I can't even look at him in the eye , I'm so ashamed . The way I was just exposed

It didn't help with everyone talking TJ's side , his parents fighting for him . I clearly didn't stand a chance there , but disputing everything was better than acknowledging

Dad : even now you're still lying to me

Me : father I'm....

Dad : I am so disappointed in you and your brother , I cannot believe that this is what power has degraded you two to . When I said don't accept defeat , fight until you've exhausted all . I was not saying kill your own brother , a child Princess have you no shame ? I'm even ashamed to call you my daughter right now , imagine then how your mother feels about you right now . You were just too quick to point fingers weren't you ?

Me : daddy.....

I'm a crying mess and he walks out  
leaving me like he doesn't even give a  
damn

How do I even begin to fix this ? Lord I  
messed up , but why is he oblivious to  
the fact that I lost my throne

Doesn't he care about that as well ? I  
mean that throne is my life

And I lose it to a baby that doesn't even  
know a single thing

I need some comfort right now , and  
when I left outside Sambulo was not  
there

I try calling him , I don't even know why  
do I bother myself because he has  
replaced me now

And he doesn't care , he was just too  
quick . Even outside there , he didn't  
give a damn seeing me cry like that

- 
- 
- 
-

\*Sambulo\*

What a day it has been , and I'm just glad  
to be back at my house

Where there is no drama , damn those  
two kids are something else . And I  
cannot believe they can stoop so low , to  
want to harm a baby



A baby , all because of a throne . Now I  
feel like that's some great curse they're  
suffering

It's like fates have been changed , and  
twisted now . The Oceans are winning  
against oManzini

Am I just glad that I'm not a part of that ,  
like I dodged a bullet there . Missed it by  
inches and I'm glad

Lizzy : they're asleep , I have to go now

Me : wait ....

I get up and hold her hand

Me : it's late now

Lizzy : yes

Me : okay listen , thank you for sticking around even after hours still

Lizzy : and you know I don't mind

Me : yes right

A few seconds in silence , she tries to pull her hand away . But I pull it back

Me : please spend the night , I'm lazy to drive . And like you said yourself it's late now

Lizzy : I....

It's one tired answer already , and not what I want to hear

Me : please

Damn I beg , I beg and she fucking even feels it . But at least it gives me a smile

Lizzy : okay

Me : thank you

Now we shouldn't be going to rooms ,  
unless we're going to one

So this couch will just have to be our bed  
for the night , because I just want to  
hold her in my arms

Lizzy : I'm tired though , it's been a long  
day . I could use a bed

You and me both , but you won't want  
the same bed with me so

Me : a great movie is playing in just a few minutes , why don't I get a throw find some snacks and we watch it ?

Lizzy : I won't even last 10 minutes

Me : it's fine , I'll take you to bed if you disappoint me

She laughs

Lizzy : okay , I won't even bother arguing

It's even better , because then I can take

her to my bed just fine . I'll come up with  
some lame excuse in the morning

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I don't understand why these people are  
still here , like I don't fucking get it

They shouldn't be here , because every time I just look at them I want to kill them

I've checked on my family , and they're asleep

I'm still angry even now , this is the one day I should have spent with Bia and our kids because now they're leaving tomorrow

Baba : what happened here today , showed me just what a division of kids I've raised . If only I've known before , that my very own blood will be their

own downfall . I would have never fought , for these thrones . Because today they're the very same thing , killing my kids . I'm ashamed , more than I'm even disappointed . I saw colour's in my kids , I never even knew existed . Hell I'm not perfect , I'm far from it . But this kind of wickedness and evil , I have never held it against one of my blood . I've bred a dangerous species of kids , and you're even capable of even killing me your own father

Aunt : dad....



Baba : let me just say this , to the four of you . And I hope you will all hear and understand me , if anything and I mean anything at all happens to my grandchildren . I swear , I will feast on all of you

Even me ? But why me because those are my kids

Baba : I hope that's clear , even a slight scratch that will be caused by anyone's hand on them . You better not test me , because you have no idea what you might just poke . If you fucking want to be animals and kill each other , fucking

do it and see if I'll actually give a damn .  
But touch my grandchildren

He gets up and walks out

Aunt : you got all this TJ

Me : help me and stay away from me  
daughter , I will hurt you even if you  
come an closer to her

Uncle : and his is....

Me : you don't fucking get to talk to me

I get up and walk out , before my father  
thinks to be a parent a reprimand me

He's cool how , being on my side like  
that . I don't need his parents self , he  
can be that tomorrow

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 42\*

\*Sambulo\*

I've been staring at her for quite a whole now , and I'm admiring every single feature on her face

She's one beautiful woman , and it's amazing just how I've never looked at her anyhow before

She moves slowly , and opens her eyes .  
It's the expression that causes me to  
laugh

Me : good morning to you too

Lizzy : Ahhhh.....this is your room.... I'm  
in your bed

Me : cuddling me

She tries to move back , I hold her closer.  
She looks so awkward right now

I flip her over , and get on top of her .

Lizzy : I....

I capture her lips into mine

Lizzy : breath....

I deepen the kiss , and that shuts her up .  
She moves her hands all over my back

I fiddle with her boobs , she lets out  
slight moans . And parts her legs , giving  
me way

I position myself between her leg ,  
trailing my hand down to her nuna

She whimpers , I pull out of the kiss . She moves her hands to my briefs

Me : you sure ?

She opens her eyes

Lizzy : yes

I suck on her neck , she takes my briefs off . I pull off the t-shirt she's wearing

It's mine , I had to change her yesterday.  
I take her panties off

I lean over to her side of the drawer and pull a condom

Me : come one , put it on

I get on my knees , she's a bit shy no . I tear the condom wrap and hand it to her

She fucking takes her own damn good time putting the condom on my dick

I tease her , rubbing it on her wet nuna already

Lizzy : stop teasing me



We laugh , I lean down we kiss . And I slowly insert my dick inside of her

She's no virgin alright , but I can tell by the slight struggle it's been quite a while she's had some

I take slow deep strokes , and she welcomes me

Her moans fill my ears , good thing that door is locked . I wouldn't want my daughter's walking in on this . I move back , getting on my knees . Pulling her thighs a bit up

I pick up my pace , she holds tight on the pillow

I slide my disk in and out for quite a while , and just putting it back all in

Lizzy : Ohhh Yesss...right there , just right there oh

This is one fucking sexy sight to be looking at , I smile

Lizzy : just like that

She moves her hand and rubs on her clit viciously , seconds later she cums

A few deep thrusts , and I cum . I pull out taking the condom off

I lean back down and kiss her , just for a short while and we pull out

Lizzy : now what.....

Me : you're my woman now

She blushes , I don't even want to know what she wanted to ask

Me : I know I'm clean , can I just do it raw now . I promise we'll go get tested , and I'll get you the pill . I'll even pull out

She laughs

Me : my pull out game is not whack

Lizzy : I don't know

Me : just trust me

I rub myself on her , and the way she parts her legs further . I got the go ahead

.

\*Princess\*

We spent the night at the hotel with  
Prince

Having our father go at us like that ,  
wasn't nice at all

And it kind of felt like he was siding with  
the Oceans , more than us

He didn't even listen much , to us or  
what we wanted to say

I was going to lie yes , but still . It's not  
like he knew , he cannot read people's  
minds

And this morning I just woke up , and I  
felt like going to see Sambulo

I know he loves me , he was for me for  
years and years

That thing he had with him yesterday ,  
cannot be what he replaces me with

Which is why I'm at his house right now ,  
since he's not answering my calls

I knock at the door , and stand outside  
for a while . And no one opens , but I  
know there's people

His car is here , I knock again . He opens  
and damn he looks so good

Me : hi

I make my way in

Me : baby I know I messed up and ....

It's the thing , in his shirt . What used to be my favourite shirt

Me : what is she doing here ?

I lose all my senses

Sambulo : that's my woman , question is what are you doing here ?

What the hell ?

Me : you're asking me that shit ?



Sambulo : my kids are here , you will not come to my house and swear like that .  
Stop coming here , you look desperate .  
And it's disgusting

I lift my hand to slap him but he holds it

Her : Sambulo please don't hurt her

His face immediately softens at her voice, it cuts me deep

He's gone and fallen in love with someone else , and he's not even ashamed about it

Sambulo : babe I don't hit women , I am  
bit a violent man

He says all this with a smile to her , and  
it's so assuring

Sambulo : Princess get out of my house ,  
I don't ever wanna see you again

I tear up

Me : baby it's me....I love you , you can't  
do this to us . It's me....I....

And he shoves me out , I almost fall and  
trip . But I quickly balance myself on the  
wall

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

It's just a sad morning , but I'm glad to  
be leaving and going home

And just getting away from the drama of  
this aunt and uncle

They can deal with it , while I'm so not in  
the middle of it

The grandparents and great grandfather  
are seeing us off

My father sent the jet with detailed  
royal protection

We had to just avoid a lot of things , so  
the less people know that we're  
traveling

For safety reasons , although I just think  
it's dramatic

But I've gotten used to it , it's just hard  
to ignore it

Nana is here , and I'm so happy that I  
won't be traveling alone

As much as my babies are peaceful ,  
flying could somewhat be problematic

It's a new environment for them , I just  
hope they will adjust just fine even when  
we get home

Without their grandparents there , and  
mostly their father

They're so used to his presence , you can  
swear that they know when he's around

TJ : take care of yourself

The way he fails at expressing hurt ,  
unless it's just visible on the face

Me : I will and you be safe

He nods

Me : TJ I mean it

TJ : yeah I will

Me : stay clear of dangerous things

TJ : you sometimes just want me to say things I won't do , and that would be lying to you

I give up

Me : these kids need a father

TJ : and I'm not going anywhere

Me : you better

TJ : I'll see you soon

I'll rather , than having to say goodbye .  
We never say that to each other

TJ : we're getting married soon right ?

Me : sort out your throne issues , and  
my father must never find out about this  
drama with your family

TJ : I really don't care what he does



He did not

TJ : in a way he will be helping all of us

Me : no ! You kill each other , keep him out of it

He chuckles

TJ : I'll video call everyday , they don't go to bed without talking to me

I nod

Me : I have to.....

He shuts me up with a kiss , it ends in  
tears for me . I hate that he's staying  
behind

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

Been a hell of a day for me , just few  
hours without them

And I feel like I'm not coping at all , I need something to distract me

JJ : you good ?

I nod

JJ : you going somewhere ?

Me : yeah , I'll probably be back later

JJ : not to whore I hope

Me : fuck , I assured Bia I won't be doing any of that

JJ : alright , just keep up to it

I don't intend to fuck up like that again ,  
a second cheating

She will not even think twice , she'll  
definitely be done with me

Besides I have a lot of shit to deal with ,  
so for months blue balls will kill me

Until she's back again , but I'll soon be  
going to see them . I get into my car ,  
and drive off to Bay Hotel . That's where  
Ntsika is at

I arrive to his room , and he looks worse than I feel

Me : what's wrong with you ?

Ntsika : what do you want ?

Me : I don't know

I walk in , and take a beer from the fridge

Me : you're leaving large here

Ntsika : you know me and you are not friends right ?

I sit down on the couch

Me : I feel like we have a weird friendship going on

He just stares at me , I have my beer

Ntsika : when you're done doing whatever you're doing , leave

Me : have you ever killed someone close to you ?

Ntsika : what's close ?

Me : like a relative , an aunt maybe you know or an uncle

Ntsika : you want to kill your family now? Who's next your father ?

I chuckle

Me : don't be mad , Tyler would snap my neck before I even get any closer to him

He takes a beer and sits down

Ntsika : what did they do ? I can always kill them for you

Me : you would ?

He just stares at me

Me : right , they're a threat to me and my daughter

Ntsika : no wonder

Me : now as long as they're alive , I cannot trust that my kids are safe . It's not like my family is going to do anything



about it , rather than just talking . And people with sinister plans , they always want to see them through

Ntsika : they die and everyone will know it's you

Me : I can't have them living

Ntsika : don't be hasty about this , you're fucking smart that much I know . You need your family with you , by your side. You can't even make this look like an accident

Me : I know that

Ntsika : so how old is your aunt ?

Me : maybe 38 or something

He nods

Me : fuck no , you want to fuck her ?

He laughs , and for the first time in months knowing this man . I hear him laugh

Ntsika : she can always fuck me up in the course of being together

Me : you abuse her , and her brother interferes and you kill them both

Ntsika : more like make her suffer but yeah , and they die not by your hand and all is solved

Me : you're a dick , but I knew someday I was gonna like you

He chuckles

Ntsika : I'm trying to persuade someone right now , so this better not ruin my chances of getting Nobuhle

Me : who the hell is that ?

He sighs

Ntsika : get me everything you can on your aunt , and leave this shit to me

I guess I can live with that

- 
- 
-

\*INSERT 43\*

\*Sambulo\*

Lizzy has been around , since yesterday .  
And I'm surprised she didn't leave , after  
that stunt Princess pulled

She spent the night in my bed again , but she said she's staying because of the girls

Because I apparently expose them to crazy women , I knew that was a lie

But who cares ? She spent the night and well I couldn't be happy right now

Me : I'm sorry about what happened

We never even talked about it

Lizzy : she's the queen you were engaged to ?

I laugh

Me : engaged ? Hell no ! We were going to get married , but never engaged

She looks at me

Me : really , I didn't propose to her . I didn't go down on one knee with a ring in hand , and ask if she can marry me

She laughs

Lizzy : are you two done? I don't want to be involved in a mess Sam

Me : you won't , and don't call me that .  
Only my sister calls me that

I hug her from behind , and plant a kiss on her cheek

Me : I love you , and I want this to work

Lizzy : I love you too , and I want it to work more

Me : slowly , but we'll get there right ?



Lizzy : we're going to get there either way

Me : I love that

I hope she's the one that gets to stick around , I'm really tired of these relationships

This fails , I swear love is not meant for me.

.

.

.

.

\*Ntsika\*

I know now , I'm involving myself in things that have nothing to do with me

I could have just told young Oceans , to get Ferrari to kill his aunt and uncle

But that would cause a rift between him  
and his woman

I'm all for young love , and I like the boy .  
He's a new father , a family man now

Some things , he just needs to distance  
himself from

This woman is beautiful now lies , skinny  
yeah and not my type

Also she's tanned slightly going on  
brown , I like them light and chubby or  
thick

Just like Nobuhle , and just thinking  
about her leaves me with a sigh

Fuck ! It's a struggle , but I'm keeping  
myself at a distance

I got burnt once , I don't need to feel  
that again . That's why I'm observant  
about the whole thing

This should just take me a two weeks ,  
and I should be done with her

The longer I stay in Cape Town , the  
more I might ruin my chances

I always have to make slight appearances back in Pretoria , so I'm not forgotten

I see her walking towards my direction , and she looks like a mess

I got to know the hotel that she and her brother stay in

I get out of the car , and walk directly to her . And I notice she has a cup of coffee. I pray and hope it's hot , I take a deep breath and brace myself bumping into her

The fucking coffee spills all over my chest , but it'll wear off in a second

But damn I feel it , and don't I just groan in pain

Princess : what the fuck is wrong with you ?

Ah she swears , that annoys me . It'll be one of the things I fuck her up for

Me : sorry

I say so polite and walking past her , and  
it's seconds later

Princess : oh my gosh , I am so sorry . Sir  
are you okay , oh please forgive me

I smile to myself , she's now holding my  
arm

Me : it...it hurts

Princess : oh gosh , should I take you to  
the hospital ?

Me : no....no....I just need to...check  
it...I'll be fine

Princess : you stay around ?

Me : urgh , no

Princess : okay...okay well I have a room  
here , please let's go to my room let me  
check you

Oh well , you'll check me girl alright

- 
- 
-



\*Princess\*

I blame Sambulo , I haven't been myself  
since I went to his place yesterday

It's his fault I'm such a mess , look now  
what I've done

Yesterday I went through a red robot ,  
and only realised in the middle

Me : I am really sorry

Him : it's okay

I place the bowl in front of him , he takes his shirt off

I swallow the lump on my throat , like it's the tattoos

Truly I have a thing for bad boys , like I really have . And this one , looks like the kind

Him : uhm what now ?

He brings me out of my thoughts , and I look at him embarrassed

Me : sorry

I take the cloth and wet it , I wipe his chest . My one hand on his shoulder

It's how he's looking at me , and I'm trying to avoid looking back into his eyes

When I'm done , I apply some rub on the chest . He's not burnt or anything like that , but he's just red

Surely tomorrow he will be fine , and  
this won't even be visible at all

Me : I hope your woman doesn't accuse  
you

He chuckles

Him : what woman ?

He cannot be single

Me : I didn't get your name

Him : you didn't answer me

Me : the one in your life , girlfriend ,  
wife, fiancé , or baby mama

He laughs slightly

Him : there's no such , neither of them  
all . And I'm Ntsika Dlamini

Ntsika , such a powerful name

Me : Princess Manzini

Ntsika : under the circumstances we met

I laugh

Me : that was just embarrassing on my side

Ntsika : you owe me coffee for that

Me : I do ?

Ntsika : yes

Me : even better , I'll make lunch dinner or whatever works for you

He smiles , and this man is handsome .  
I'm slowly taking a look into his looks

Ntsika : in that case , let's exchange numbers . And let's do dinner tomorrow

And he just had to say tomorrow , why not today ? But we exchange numbers

Ntsika : aren't you going to offer me some food ?

That takes me by surprise

Me : now here ?

Ntsika : yes

Me : wow okay....okay

He makes himself comfortable , and I take the phone and call room service

I can't make him food here , but I can order it

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 44\*



\*Bianca\*

I don't know who is actually worse , my parents or TJ's parents

Like these babies are always with everyone except me

Not my father taking Lindo to a meeting with the council today

I just couldn't believe , but yes it happened . And Nozi was left behind because of the sleeping thing

Their call with their father this morning , left me in tears

He misses his kids so bad , and I could see how emotional he was getting

Every time they looked at the screen , touched it or even uttered something

I so wish there was a better way than this , yes it was hard even for us

But now I think it's just worse , but hopefully soon we will get to see him again

I was worried about them , but they seem to have settled just fine

Like they're getting used to this side of the family now

Even the small uncle's that always wants to touch or hold them

And my brother's are so tiny for 6 year olds alright , they look like they're only 4

And their short height doesn't help either , and worse they're slightly chubby and have baby faces

They're just so cute , so it's always the funniest thing ever watching them trying to hold the babies

And my little Kiro , okay he's the cutest . I swear Leonardo Ferrari's genes are something else

The boy is a little charmer right , and worse he has a dimple . I'm like damn , why didn't my princess take that from him ?

Anyways all is good and well , it's a full babies house in the Tuscan Kingdom

And I haven't said anything , about anything that happened in South Africa. And at this moment , I have no intentions to do so . Because we're happy and fine as we are

Without anyone knowing anything , so all is well to be honest . Besides us missing daddy , we have nothing to complain about

Mom : I hope you will be staying around for a while

We're outside by the garden , we're having some kind of a picnic

It's a girl's thing , so it's just the four of us

Me : maybe

Nana : that's not assuring

Me : well a lot has happened , TJ and I are getting married . And he's to be king back to his home in KZN

Them : what ?

Okay

Mom : he's going to be king ?

Why are they surprised ? I mean they know he's royalty so

Me : yes

Nana : meaning you will be queen there?

Mom : Bianca , baby this means you the kids will be moving to South Africa permanently

Is she crazy or what ? She's the one who moved to Italy permanently

Because she married my father and become queen to his kingdom

How am I different to her ? Like mother like daughter

Nana : you moved as well

Tell her Nana please , tell her . She has forgotten and someone needs to remind her (grandmother)



Mom : ma ! (Mom)

Nana : don't ma me , you know it's the truth (mom)

I laugh

Mom : this is not fair

Wait until her husband hears about this , I really don't need to be going back and forth with them

It's happening , and that's that . They now can't go back on their word

Me : either way mother , being queen or not . After marriage I was still going to move there

She pops her eyes , like what's the shock about ?

Me : why get married , and still be leaving across the world from my husband ?

She rolls her eyes Nana and I laugh , this one smiles we if she can here what we're talking about

Mom : even Paris is mocking me

TJ would die hearing her calling his  
Nozizwe like that , he hates those Paris  
and London names

And I wasn't serious , I just did it to stick  
it up to you seeing how much he hated  
them

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Tyler Jnr\*

My phone rings and it's Ntsika , I haven't seen nor spoken to him since I last saw him

So yeah now , I have his number . I can call him , the same way he calls me

The whole lose that number , you can't call me unless I call you business is done

We have moved to trustworthy levels now , which is so much better

I swear I like it so much , just today he paid me

And it's not yet the end of the week , I  
don't get what's that all about

We've moved , and it's no longer  
arrogance like when we started talking

Me : The Distributor

He laughs

Me : what the fuck do you want ?

Ntsika : you're so stupid

Me : takes one idiot to know another

Ntsika : I have a date , how do you like that ?

I look around making sure no one is near or close by , or eavesdropping

Me : was she that easy ?

He chuckles

Ntsika : she burnt my chest with coffee , I ended up in her room . That's all you need to know

Wow , I didn't think like two days later there will be progress

Me : don't go fucking falling in love with her

Ntsika : I told you I have someone I want, so no thanks . And your aunt is not my type , I prefer to lay on meat than have bones poke me

Something is wrong with this guy's mind, how does even utter such things ?

Me : forget I even said anything

Ntsika : you got the package ?

Me : what's it for ? It's not yet Friday

Ntsika : send your fiancé money , now I know you're a rich kid . You probably have trust funds and all , but that's money you fucking worked for . And that's the money you soil your woman with , money from your own sweat . Not perks of being a royal kid

Shit ! He drops the call and I'm laughing alright . I guess I can rob the twins fund , just this once . And I send the whole 100K to their mother



I know what she said , but even if she returns the money I'll still send it

Ntsika is right , and I guess she also does deserve to be given money from my own hard work

.

.

.

.

\*Princess\*

I walk in the lounge , and Prince is having  
a drink

I couldn't sleep last night , just thinking  
about Ntsika

I kept seeing his face , and I know his  
every face feature now

It's his good looks , on a normal day I can  
admit I would never fall for him

But there's something about his  
presence , and those tattoos

He's so worth a shot , at what I don't know . But if he asks for it , then he's got it

We haven't been able to talk with anyone in the family

Not my father , Tyler or Ledi even . I guess they're still angry at us

I just wish , we can find my father and talk to him . Outside of that house just us alone

Prince : where are you going ?

Me : on a date

Prince : what ?

He raises his brow

Me : I said on a date

Prince : I heard , and with who ? Because you said it yourself that Sambulo has moved on

Me : that's old news and I'm so over him

Who am I kidding ? I hate how he  
treated me like trash , in front of his new  
thing

I'm the very same woman , he always  
kept coming back to always

And now he doesn't give a damn , I  
wonder how he got to that

Maybe the new pussy is flames , and he  
cannot use his head to think clearly . But  
I am hurt , because now I have nothing .  
No throne no rules , no kingdom no gifts  
and no fallen queens

Maybe we could have made us work now , and for real this time without any interference

But that's done , according to him . I don't know where I stand to be honest

Prince : that was fast

Me : stop with your comments , and while I'm gone can you think of a way of how we can get father to talk to us ?

He sighs

Prince : fine , don't have sex ke

Me : I look that cheap ?

He moves his eyes from me , and I'm  
offended by his statement

Because I don't know what he meant by  
that , but it sounded offensive somehow

I walk out , Ntsika has long texted that  
he's arrived

And he's leaning against his car , I give  
him this he sure cleans up nice

Me : hi

I greet him , and he greets me back with  
a peck on my lips

And I go back for a proper kiss , me and  
my forward self

But guy doesn't push me off , he actually  
gives in and takes charge of the kiss

After a while we pull out , and he looks  
at me I even shy away

Ntsika : you're beautiful



It's always when a man says you're beautiful , instead of saying I look beautiful

I blush like crazy , and thank him passing on a compliment to him as well

Ntsika : shall we ?

I now , he opens the door for me . I get in and he goes to his side as well , he gets in and drives off

I'm supposed to be treating him , but I don't even know where we are going .

All this is just so exciting , it feels like  
new love

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 45\*

\*Camps Bay CPT\*

Africa walks in the lounge , and finds his son busy on his laptop

He sits down opposite him , Tyler closes the laptop and looks at his father

Africa : you see what is happening ?

Me : yes , the family is in two now

Africa : you know I love Dante , and I'll probably love him until my own time comes

Tyler nods , he loves his grandfather just as much

Africa : I can't change the fact that my true identity is being a Manzini , and now I have my kids in half . My surnames split apart

Tyler hates what this is now doing to his father , he really doesn't need all of this

And they the children are the cause of it

Africa : do you understand what this is doing to this family , you have gone and

taken a surname of the man who raised me . That's what you see as your identity, and the twins have taken the origin surname . Is it safe to say you're just excluding yourself from the bloodline ?

Tyler sighs

Africa : even your son gave his kids the Oceans surname

Tyler : and it's clear that's the surname fitting of my own family , it's clear now . Throughout everything that happened , your children have proved to me that

they don't regard me a Manzini . And  
maybe that's because I'm not their  
mother's son ...

A lump gets stuck on his throat , because  
he knows just how much Royalty loved  
him

She raised him , and always did good and  
right him

Not even once did he feel like he wasn't  
her child , she never showed that to him.  
Africa moves and sits closer to his son ,  
he places his hand on his back

And tears escapes Tyler's eyes , his  
father sees just how much his siblings  
have broken him

He feels like as a father he has failed  
Tyler , he's his son and his blood as much  
as the twins

And now Tyler and his family are  
Oceans, while the others are the  
bloodline with Manzini

He feels like this is saying Tyler doesn't  
belong with the family

.

\*Princess\*

I just can't stop , smiling and blushing .  
Just thinking about last night

God it was amazing and just beautiful ,  
Ntsika is a man and a whole lot more .  
It's how he was throughout the whole  
night , and damn the kiss



It's the kiss that sealed the might for me,  
and I just knew I had to see him again

And soon at that , the date was just  
perfect . Even though he was all about  
just knowing me , and he said less about  
himself . It was still perfect , and I'm  
hoping the next one will be even more  
perfect

Prince : and that smile ?

I'm having coffee he's just walking in ,  
for someone with his own room he sure  
spends a lot of time in mine

Me : did you manage to talk with dad ?

Prince : mhm I called him , he said he will see you

Great !

Me : when ?

Prince : today , later on . He said he will come here

Me : we better get our story together , and cry about this as much as we can .

We're really loosing to Tyler and his kids,  
I refuse to be defeated this way

Prince : just tread carefully and don't  
upset him

Me : I won't okay , I'll watch my words  
and everything I say to him

He pours himself some coffee

Prince : I need to go back home

Me : so soon ? We're still busy and in the  
middle of a pressing matter

He sighs , and I feel as if I can't trust  
Prince right now

But maybe I shouldn't think the worst ,  
before he actually proves me right and  
messes up

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I don't know , but I know Princess and Prince they can't live long

Seeing my father in that state broke me , and worse my grandfather

He didn't even know what to say to his own son , and all thanks to those two

I could never let this slide , even if I wanted to . I just have to deal with them, for all our sakes

I call Ntsika , and first ring he answers

Me : you hold your phone in your hand ?

He laughs

Ntsika : what do you want ?

Me : you coming right along just fine ?

Ntsika : perfect , would you like to know when I'll be having her on my bed ?

Me : I'll rather not

Ntsika : okay , I got what I wanted . And I know exactly how to push her to piss me

off . She's strong willed and she has this pathetic confidence that she's all that . She'll be wanting me to bow down to her , I've already showed me I'm a man of means . She will get on my wrong , because she thinks highly of herself . Don't worry I'll see this through

Me : thank you for doing this , and compromising yourself

Ntsika : just I have to move like a ghost , your family can never know I'm with her. And they must never find out I'm the one who killed them , so that has to be on the low

He has to avoid getting caught , so being on the low and no one knowing is what's best

Me : alright

Ntsika : worry not yourself about this

I believe I can trust him , I drop the call .  
And call Bianca , she takes a while before she answers

Me : my girl

Bia : I really don't want to talk to you



This is about the money

Me : are you good ?

Bia : you heard me right ?

Me : I miss you , like I really do

She sighs , she can hear a guy is in need

Bia : I don't want your blood money TJ ,  
and I don't get why you would send me  
that much money . Knowing I don't need  
it

Me : perks of dating a royal kid right ,  
they never have a need for money .  
That's why you always have to send it to  
them , to stay on the safe side

She laughs

Me : kiss my kids for me

Bia : they're taking a bath now , you  
should video call

I never want to miss these moments , so  
even when they eat or just play or

getting dressed . I want to be a part of them , that's why I always video call

.

.

.

.

\*Sambulo\*

I'm having lunch with my sister , and I can't help but be worried

She doesn't look well at all , and I just know that something is not right here

Me : what's wrong ?

She looks at me , and she looks like she's about to break down

I move from my chair to the one closer to her , I hold her hand

Ledi : you know I loved Princess , I really thought she's a sister to me . She's seen me through my dark times , she's always been by my side . Like I always knew she

was someone I can always turn to , but  
now she's the one person who has  
turned against my family

Me : what is wrong with that girl  
though?

I swear Princess has taken a U-turn  
somewhere , and she has just turned  
into something we don't know

Makes one wonder , if this is how she's  
always been like . Or if it's power that  
changed her

Honestly even without being with Lizzy ,  
I would be lying if I said I still feel  
something for her

Like all feelings have died , and now  
everything that just has to do with her  
disgust me

It's the things she does , how she carries  
herself . And the things she says . She's  
no longer the person we knew , or rather  
we thought we knew

Me : why don't you just cut her off ?

Ledi : that's like saying let them be , and  
let us be

Me : isn't that what's best for everyone?  
Because this whole situation just seems  
to be toxic

She smiles

Ledi : it's toxic alright , Tyler has taken it  
hard

These people are just having it all hard ,  
and all because of two idiots

.

\*Princess\*

He really doesn't look good , like fine .  
He seems angry

And now I don't if this was a good idea  
or what , but I'm crossing fingers and  
hoping for the best



Me : it's good to see you dad

Dad : I don't feel the same way Princess

That's not Princess like being one or  
being his , but it's addressed as my name

And it hurts slightly to be honest

Me : I....we asked to see you because....

Dad : the only reason I'm here , is  
because I feel like you two need to hear  
this . Tyler is my son as much as you're  
both my kids , and the fact that your

mother wasn't his biological mother .  
Doesn't make him any less of a Manzini ,  
than it makes you two . The fact that he  
uses Oceans doesn't make it an outcast ,  
but he's keeping that surname of mine  
alive. And his son has continued to do  
the same , they're still my blood  
nonetheless . Just because you're full  
blue blood , and you got to be king and  
queen doesn't make you any better .  
There's nothing special about you two ,  
like absolutely nothing . And the sooner  
you come to that realisation , the better  
for everyone

He gets up , and I'm in tears

Dad : you have disappointed me so dearly , I thought I was having kids but clearly my sperms were rotten

Ouch , did he just say we're rotten sperms

Dad : and I still say , let anything happen to this kids . And I will even forget I fathered you two

He walks towards the door

Me : dad....

I get on my knees crying , he just walks out . I wail

Me : dad.....

I try to crawl after him , but Prince holds me . What have I done ?

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 46\*

\*A MONTH LATER\*

\*Bianca\*

It's been quite a peaceful time , and it's exactly what I think I needed

I've been able to focus on the kids , and I did well with school

So it's final year , and I now can't wait to just be done with it all

TJ came around the Christmas week , although he couldn't come when new year hit

It was sad , because I really thought we were going to be together . His kids loved seeing him around , even though he wasn't staying at the palace with us

My father is still crazy like that , and was like “he’s still a boyfriend”

A whole boyfriend , that’s paying negotiations this week

Yes you heard that right , my father wasn’t all for this . I wonder how he went about paying bride price for my mother

TJ’s grandfather wanted things done the correct and right way . So a letter was sent , and my father responded to it

Now weekend things are happening , my mother's brothers are coming tomorrow

After two weeks we got here Nana left and went back home , but she came back again today

I'm happy and excited , but still a bit scared at the same time

My mother told me how these things are done , and it's quite scary

My father could ruin this whole thing , and then go on like it wasn't his fault



He still doesn't like the Oceans , as much as he's accosted his grandkids . And he loves them very much

Surprisingly Nozi loves my father more than anyone , right after his father . I'm suspicious she really does have a thing for handsome men

Her father says she has a good shoulder like her mother , and I'm not very sure about that

Because I fell for a criminal , and I've been so elevated now to receiving weekly fiancé allowance

And I now have access to the babies trust fund , as if I said I want to know what's going on it there

I've just gone to letting him be , if this how he sees and prefers to live his life so be

It's a shame I'll be a widower very young, and a single mother

Not to mention having to tell his kids how he was gunned down , it'll be like a movie

He's on video call now with his babies , I  
feel so ignored

They mumble a whole lot of gibberish  
now , and Nozi is worse

Miss sleeping beauty doesn't sleep as  
much anymore

She's too loud in the mouth , and she  
doesn't take after me at all

Me : you know I also miss you

He chuckles

Me : it's not a joke papi

TJ : take them to your parents then , or  
their uncle's

The very same 6 year olds uncle's , soon  
to be 7 my boys have grown

Me : thought you'll never say

I pick them up , and it's a struggle . They  
want to fight me , but I'm winning this  
fight . I walk into the play room , and  
why should I suffer when there's a full  
house

Mom : why are they grumpy ?

Me : call cut off

Mom : and TJ can't call his kids back ?

TJ is also my man , I want him to myself  
now

Me : I don't know

I put them down and leave them there ,  
don't they all laugh as I walk out . I don't  
even care , they can gossip all they want  
about me

I get back to my chamber , and he's still waiting

TJ : I'm sorry

I take the laptop and lay down on the bed

Me : for what ?

TJ : I know when I'm with them I tend to focus on them alone

Me : forgetting me

He sighs I laugh

Me : you know they miss you

TJ : I know , and I miss you guys so much

Me : you're coming right ?

TJ : yeah

It's just a few days and he will be here

Me : how's everything there ?

TJ : my parents are good , uncle Sambulo and Lizzy are a real thing like yeah it's happening . And ubaba is taking it one day at time

Seems like everything will fall into place after all

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Ntsika\*



TJ walks in , and he looks like a mess . His white t-shirt bloody as fuck

Lwazi : what the hell ?

He attends to him

TJ : I'm fine give me a chair and a second

Even when he's shot almost to death , he's still TJ

Lwazi shakes his head , and gives him a chair . He sits down groaning and takes the t-shirt off

Does he not pop three bullets right on his chest , Lwazi walks out

I laugh , when will he get used to this .  
Surely he still hasn't forgotten the first time

Me : what happened ?

TJ : the guys at the border were full of shit

Me : I told you to take Thingo and...

TJ : hey I'm fine , stop with the noise

Noise he says

TJ : where is your whore ?

That's his aunt

Me : she's still a mess

TJ : you still going to do it ?

Me : why not ? I want to drive her insane

TJ : grandfather cutting them off , got to  
her so bad . She's broken

Me : and I'll just finish her

TJ : I still need her dead , alive she could wake up and plan something else

Me : I got you

He leans back , and the wounds are slowly closing in

Me : what the fuck are you ?

He sighs , breathing heavily

TJ : I don't know

Me : I don't buy that shit , you wouldn't be this comfortable with what you don't know

He grunts

TJ : what's the point ? It's not like it'll go away or I'll change , freaking out doesn't help . So it's either I make peace with it , or drive myself crazy

He takes the t-shirt and wipes the blood on his chest

Me : is there anything that can kill you ,  
do you even die ?

He laughs in pain

TJ : don't kill me yet , my kids are only 3  
months

I chuckle , those kids are the only thing  
keeping him sane

We had to put a hold on the aunt and  
uncle thing , she was a pest after some  
fight with the father apparently

And this one tells me he's cut them off ,  
so she was just too needy

I didn't get a chance to really lure her in ,  
but now she's breaking and that's  
exactly what I want

.

.

.

.

\*Princess\*

Life has been hard , I've really lost my throne . A regent has been put in place

And my father personally saw to it himself , and Prince has lost his throne as well

His choice , to just up and leave . I don't even know where he is right now . I have no idea , he even left Lera behind . She's still living back at Manzini with dad and Azania

I have no idea when TJ will be crowned king , they've clearly distanced themselves from me



Like all of them , I have no idea what's happening in their lives

And I think that's how they just preferred things being , with me not knowing anything

Maybe they fear I might sabotage them , or do something crazy

I don't blame them , and Sambulo is done with me . He doesn't even shy away from declaring his love to his new woman

Life has been hell for me , and I'm all so alone . I thought I had Ntsika I really thought I did

But I don't know , just how many time he's cheated in just a month being together

One time I confronted him , and he never even denies the cheating . It's like he doesn't even care , so that confrontation didn't end well for me

I spent a night in the ER (emergency room) , he didn't even bother coming to see me after he almost killed me

But what do you know ? Two days later I was back with him, he didn't even apologize

Last night he was busy flirting with another woman , while in bed with me

This morning I left , and didn't even bother telling him where I'm going

I don't even have a friend I can cry to , I have no one I'm all alone

My father wants nothing to do with us , you can even just say he's cut us off

And it hurts to be honest , I know I was wrong . But do I deserve all of this

I'm just so close to the brink of having a mental breakdown

Ntsika is toxic for me , it's a great idea having him . But he's doing nothing for me

I might as well just cut him off , it'll be hard taking on this life thing alone but what the hell What do I have to lose that I haven't lost already ?

Now I just need some sleep , I'll go see him later and cut ties with him

I learnt from my mistake with Sambulo cutting off relationships

So it's best I do this one in person myself

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*INSERT 47\*

\*Ntsika\*

She walks in , and she looks like hell .  
Like she hasn't eaten or bathed in weeks

And I last saw her this morning , life has  
dealt this girl

Me : baby

She looks so scared , I've really broken her beyond repair

But I don't care , I don't abuse women .  
But I don't regard her as one , she's just like filth to me

Me : you almost worried me , I thought you won't come home

I'm standing still just looking at her , and she's slowly shaking . Trying to hide it best as she can

Princess : Ntsika we need to talk

Me : okay my love I'm listening , but please sit down . We can't talk while you're standing like that

She places her other hand on the other , she's really scared

Me : you're scared of me ?

She moves back

Me : I won't hurt you , come on let's talk

She keeps swallowing , I'm sure now she's dry like hell it even hurts



Me : don't try and piss me , just come and sit down

In a second her ass is on the couch

Me : now talk

Princess : I can't do this anymore , I'm sorry .

She breaks down , I call TJ and he sure answers. But we say nothing to each other . Because I just want him to listen to this , and tell me what to do

I'm doing this for him after all , it's not my problem but his

Princess : I love you yes , but this is just unhealthy and toxic . You beat me ....

Me : once

Princess : doesn't erase the fact that you did , and you're a serial cheater . I'm for you , but you're seriously just for everyone

Me : so you're basically calling me a manwhore ?

She keeps quite

Me : you're breaking up with me ?

Princess : it's for the best , this is not working

Me : it's not a fucking job , just sit tight like that . I have a call to finish , and then we can continue this talk . Baby you're breaking my heart

I pick up the phone and this one is laughing

Me : what the fuck ?

TJ : baby you're breaking my heart

Mxm he's an idiot

TJ : you're really stupid

Me : and ?

TJ : deal with her however fit you see it ,  
but either way she dies

I drop the call smiling , I hold my hand  
out and she doesn't take it

Me : come on , let's go lie down

She shakes her head

Me : I'm a lot of shit yes , but I'll never  
rape you never

I can never do that shit , not even to a  
shit shit like herself

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I can't wait to see my woman and my kids , damn I miss my people

Like I really miss them so bad , and every minute and second they spend away from me . I just feel like I'm missing a lot, I won't be waiting for the week

I'm leaving tomorrow morning , I trust Ntsika to finish off the mission with Princess

I don't need to stick around , and guard him do it . He's a fucking grown ass man

Dad : what happened to you ?

He's looking at the blood stain on the shirt , I'm healed . I don't get what happened there

Me : it's blood

Dad : I didn't ask what it is ?

Me : well , nothing happened to me

Dad : my boy , when you start doing things that are fucking out of order . And they make you anything , but not a

civilized citizen . You better be ready to stomach all of it

Shit

Me : I...

I don't know what to say , what lie will I say ? Even JJ could tell I was up to shit

And that ended with him leaving , saying he doesn't approve . But he wasn't approving something he doesn't even know



It's not like I told him , I didn't come clean to him about anything

I didn't deny either , and right now my father is telling me what's what

So I won't say I'm not doing anything , he might even punch me for just that tiny lie

Dad : I want us to talk come

I follow him to his office , we sit down

Dad : how much do you have for the lobola ? (bride price)

I didn't three 4 bullets to the chest for nothing , Ntsika paid triple on that

And that's just 300 000 set aside for the whole thing

Me : quite enough I think

Dad : you planning to take money from your trust ?

Me : no

I don't even know why I have a trust fund still at my age

Dad : I won't even ask

He better not

Dad : Africa and I will pay for the babies , you sort out your damages and lobola

Me : wow thank you , and I'll thank ubaba as well

He nods , I didn't think that they will be helping me with anything

Fuck I really appreciate the offer and the help , it shows that I'm not alone

And I appreciate them a lot

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*Sambulo\*

Life has been good , in all aspects . I have nothing to complain about

Princess left me alone , Lizzy and I are doing good

We told the girls that we're together , they were happy for us

But days later , they were like we should buy a baby

I couldn't believe that at all , but she promised that we will buy one soon

I don't know how true that is , but we will see as time goes on

And my sister supports this relationship through and through

And I appreciate her very much , she's been there for me through shit and hell

The failed relationships and the failed marriage , I hope this one is for keeps

She's busy packing for me , as I'll be heading to Italy in a few days

I'm surprised Tyler even asked me to come along , although we're fine now

I still think a part of him hates me for hurting his sister the way I did

But we're men , unlike women we don't dwell much on shit

Lizzy : just the weekend you're coming back

I smile

Me : yes baby

Lizzy : the girls and I are going to miss you , you know

Me : and I'm going to miss you even more

Lizzy : do call them

I get up and hug her from behind

Me : I think you mean "do call us"

She laughs I turn her around and we face each other , my hands rests on her waist

Me : I love you so much



She blushes , and I can't believe for years  
she's been right here

And I was just too blind to see all this ,  
look at all the happiness that's chocking  
me right now

Lizzy : I love you too

And I really wouldn't mind if we buy that  
baby , like for real

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I'm meeting with Thingo and Zweli , I  
wanted to be alone on this

But damn my men are loyal to me to the  
core , and they don't hold back in  
showing that

Me : how is he ?

Thingo : slowly loosing it

Me : how much longer do you think he has ?

Thingo : maybe a week

Me : I'll be back by then , he can't die unless I'm here

Zweli : what if he doesn't hold on that long ? What do we do ?

Me : do whatever it takes to keep him alive until I'm back

They nod

Me : has he tried changing ?

Thingo : not much , just the claws out .  
But he's out of strength , so they're  
useless . He can't even do much

Me : good keep him weak like that , as  
long as there's nothing giving him  
strength . You're both safe watching  
him, or else you'll be dead meat

They laugh , I take out the envelopes and  
hand them to them

Thingo : you take good care of us

Me : you're loyal , and I always repay  
loyalty

We shake hands and I leave , now I can  
leave and go be with my family

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 48\*

\*Princess\*

I swear Ntsika is twisted , for two days .  
Two freaking days and he has been  
chained to his bed and locked up in this  
room

My mouth is gagged , both my feet and  
hands are tied . I can't even untie myself

I can't move , I can't do anything . I've cried and exhausted all my strength

I have none left in me , I don't know why doesn't he just kill me than to torture me like this

I'm so pressed , I'm this close to peeing on myself and that's just disgusting

I'm hungry and thirsty , I never not even on my worst day think that this could one day be me . And right now I know no one is going to come and save me

I'm all by myself , with a lunatic of a man. That has me kept prisoner in his house

He finally walks in , and he has a gun in hand . I take my words back and swallow them

I don't want to die okay , he shouldn't kill me I'm useless right now I know

But anything but to die in the hands of a man , I thought loves me

Ntsika : baby



He's really sick , I swear there's something wrong with him

He grabs a chair and pulls it towards the bed , he sits down

I'm already crying just seeing him , reminds me of my pain and all the hurt I've suffered because of him

Ntsika : don't cry now

He holds the gun , pointing out towards me . I'm shit scared , and slowly peeing on myself

This is my end , and I'm staring at my death in front of me . It's not a flash in front of my eyes

Ntsika : see I'm going to kill you , and I would have loved to break every bone in you . But you're fucking not worth it , you're pathetic and you should die a pathetic death simple as that . But I want you to know why you're dying , you see if I just kill you . I wouldn't be doing my good man young Oceans any justice , or should I say that cute little thing what's her name again....Paris oh yes it's Paris . I love that name and it's perfect for her , see she's named after the city of love . And well we love her so much , that a

threat aimed at her we just want to  
remove it

I cannot believe this , so TJ is the one  
doing this ? Ntsika is doing all this for  
him ?

It was never love , he never loved me .  
He lured me in , and like the fool I am I  
just gave in

I really underestimated that boy , like  
he's even worse than his father . I shake  
my head , it's a plea with my eyes . I  
don't want to die

Ntsika : a whole queen degraded to this ,  
look you're peeing on yourself . Good  
thing those are not my sheet, otherwise  
you were going to die twice just for that

I make muffled sounds , hoping he  
unties me so I can beg for myself

But that gets him up , and he fires the  
first shot straight to my knee

I scream crying , the pain is just so  
unbearable

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

Ntsika sent me a video , I want to check it fast

I've just arrived in my hotel room , and Bia is on her way with the kids

I'm so excited that I'm going to see them, I'm finally in Italy

My parents will be coming tomorrow ,  
along with everyone one

I just couldn't wait until then , already I  
had to postpone and come today

I make sure the door is secured , I sit  
down and play the video

I watch it so intensely , I always knew  
he's dirty and he's bad

But I never thought he's this passionate ,  
I've never seen him kill anyone

Or even holding a simple gun , so it's nice seeing him in action

And I'm smiling alone , and he's busy firing those shot to every single part of her body

He was damn taking his time , even shot her feet . Like who does that ? That's not normal at all

Even the hands , the arms and the legs . I tell you she left pain before getting that one last shot to her head . Splattering her brains all over , now that's a bonus

But shit there's one shot that's disturbing , and I delete the video and call him

He damn delivered and I'm happy , he couldn't have done it better . And Princess being dead , means my child is safe

I hope my grandmother forgives me wherever she is , for what I have done to her kid

But I'm a father now myself and my kids first , before everyone else



Ntsika : yes

Me : was there a need for you to shoot her pussy ?

He sighs , like he's depressed . I really don't get that shot , honestly he just took it far with that one

It was just so unnecessary , I don't even get the meaning behind it

Ntsika : it was hell having fuck your aunt okay , that was revenge for giving me a cold wet pussy

Fuck ! Ntsika is disgusting , for a man his age

Me : forget I called you and even asked

He laughs I drop the call , and right on cue there's a knock at the door

I get up and open , someone is too happy . She just screams just few seconds seeing me

And she holds her arms out , I take her laughing . Nozi is loud , she's just too loud

Bia : that's too much happiness

I wonder when did she start knowing ,  
that this is daddy

She just melts my heart , and right now  
what I've just done . I know it's because  
of this bundle of mine

And I will do anything , and everything to  
protect my daughter

Even against those we call family , no  
one is an exception

.

\*Bianca\*

Nozi is making me jealous , she's her daddy's daughter . But I'm happy seeing my kids this happy seeing their father

It's just one beautiful and emotional moment , I hope they can get to see him more

She's finally asleep now , after a whole struggle of trying to get her to sleep

Who would have guessed ? That miss sleepy head , would one day be this loud

And want nothing to do with sleep , you literally have to force her now

TJ : someone is not tired , after all that much playing and eating

I just look at my boy , he's on the bed just sitting . Holding his sister's blanket

Me : he's strange

TJ : what do you mean ?

He laughs , and I'm being serious again .  
I'm not joking with him

Me : he just has this tendency , to watch  
Nozi when she's sleeping

TJ : he watches her and not sleep ?

I nod , and I don't think that's normal

TJ : wait you're serious ?

Me : yes , like I only started realising this last week I think . But I didn't make anything out of it , but now I see it's a thing he does

He walks to him , and tries to take him . But you can tell he doesn't want to , and he ends up crying

Me : see ?

TJ : so this is what he does ?

Me : I've never tried taking him , I just let him be . Because honestly he scares me

And that's not exaggeration , nor is it a lie

TJ : scares you ? He's a child

Me : just look at him , he's 4 months he shouldn't be like this . And mostly when the one baby sleeps , the other sleeps as well . But not your son

He looks at him for quite a while , and now I feel excluded

I want to know what he knows , or what he thinks he knows



This thing with Londi can't be normal ,  
he would rather sleep for a few minutes  
when Nozi is awake

TJ : I think it's nothing to worry about

Me : that's not the look you were giving  
me

TJ : that's because I have no idea what it  
could be

I feel like TJ is lying to me , and it doesn't  
help that I'm clueless about them

.

\*INSERT 49\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

As much as what we have , who we are  
is regarded as a curse

Labelled called all sorts of names , when it comes to my kids it's just a whole blessing

These two will always have each other's best at heart , they'll always have each other

I couldn't be a proud father , and what I witnessed I couldn't just keep to myself

When I told my grandfather when they arrived yesterday . He was damn astonished , and impressed

Nozi is just a jewel , she's too pure that kids from lineage to come after her would never come any how we have

The fact that she and her brother got to co-exist in on womb

Trying to fight each other , but also at the same time protecting one another

She didn't want the blood , Lindo wanted to be dominate . Insane yes . But they got to come from the same womb , I no longer consider us to be cursed anyhow

And all thanks to my kids , she's gifted  
and different yes . But not in a way to  
harm humans

I cannot wait , until we all get back  
home. I'll be taking my throne , and we  
can just be a family

My family is at the palace , and I'm all  
here alone at the hotel with my thoughts

Just hoping that all is going well there ,  
with the two Oceans men and king  
Ferrari in one room

One can't exactly be free , you never know what they might just do

My phone rings and it's Ntsika , I answer

Me : we're not fucking these calls are annoying

He chuckles

Ntsika : how is the wedding ?

I sigh , he lives to mock me

Me : it's negotiations

Ntsika : I'm educated you know

Me : I don't , and what do you want ?

Ntsika : so you have your uncle locked up in a dungeon ?

I laugh

Me : took you long enough to know

Ntsika : you're sick

Me : better than you

Ntsika : he's dying

Me : he can't die , not before I'm back .  
Just two days and I'll be there

Ntsika : I'll be putting him on the  
electrical chair , it'll keep you up

Me : coming through for me again

Ntsika : don't even mention it

Me : I wasn't going to



He laughs and drops the call , I want to  
kill Prince myself

.

.

.

.

\*Ntsika\*

TJ can deal with his mess when he gets  
back , I killed the aunt because I  
promised I will

And he went and kidnapped his own uncle , when everyone thought that he disappeared

That's no longer my business , it was when I said I was going to kill them both

If he dared interfered with my business with his sister , but that didn't happen

I'm back in Joburg , there's one woman that's fucking driving me insane

It's even a shame to say such , because after my fucking failed relationship I

wanted nothing to do with their kind  
anymore

But there's just something about this  
one , but fuck the drama she comes with

She's married , and the husband is just a  
fucking idiot that abuses her

He has a crazy baby mama , that once  
ordered me to kill the woman

But she just didn't have enough guts to  
go through with it , he's a fucking serial  
cheater

Damn I fuck women and discard them  
it's yesterday left overs

But even I don't come anywhere closer  
than that man

I have a good mind to visit him , and just  
teach him a fucking lesson

But playing hero is just not my thing , I  
don't wanna save her

I want her to leave because she's ready  
and wants to leave

Not because she feels like I'm wanting her , and now she has to have a way out

Hell no , I got burnt once and never again . So I'm better playing off at a distance

I'm at the restaurant she works at , and she's been all over the floor

And I can't seem to take my eyes off of her , she's such a sight for sore eyes

Lwazi : everywhere we go , there's always projects

And he just called the woman who will be fucking be Mrs Dlamini , a project

The very same stupid idiot , who couldn't get right of Princess's dead body

I had to get Thingo and Zweli to do it , just a simple thing as burning someone with acid

Me : and with this project I failed massively

He doesn't believe , I just called him a project as well

Me : must be nice when it's addressed at others ?

Lwazi : come on !

Me : you still need to know your place , and keep your nose and mouth out of my business . Unless I ask you to

He bows his head and gets busy on the laptop again

I shake my head , and continue doing  
what I was doing

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

Everything went well , I just couldn't  
believe it at all



Like no hassles , no nothing . No one at each other's throats , like the father's behaved

They really behaved and acted like parents , in so proud of them to be honest

So my babies and now , are really family with daddy

I'm back at the hotel , don't give me that look . I just wanted to be with him . We're watching them both sleeping , and it's the cutest thing ever

It was hard getting Londi to sleep though, but he finally did

Me : after the cheating I never thought me and you could ever be a thing again

TJ : what ?

He hugs me from behind , I hold his hands placing mine over his

Me : I was so hurt , and so insecure . I thought that maybe I wasn't enough for you anymore , thought you will leave . And just be with someone better , I

never thought I would be here and  
calling myself an Oceans

TJ : soon to be Mrs

I smile

TJ : that was just me being a guy , being  
foolish and all . But that week apart ,  
made me realise that I can't do this life  
thing without you . And right there and  
there , I just knew I needed to get my act  
together

Me : it was a few days

He laughs

TJ : it felt like a week

Me : I'm glad we're over that

TJ : me too , and this is a forever

Me : until infinity and beyond

He turns me around and we kiss

.

.

.

\*Sambulo\*

I've just gotten off the phone with Lizzy  
and my girls , and they miss me

I miss them as well , and it's a good thing  
tomorrow we're leaving

We can't stick much longer , unlike the  
black families the white family didn't

want unnecessary ceremonies and events

So everything else that's left behind , will be done when everyone is back in South Africa

I'm with Tyler and he's with his granddaughter , these two have a bond I have never seen before

It's already way so late at night ,but as soon as we got back He went and got her from her parents , I thought she would have cried by now

Because she was sleeping when he got her , but no ways . She's still laughing and playing

But right now , they looks awkward . She has her hand on his cheek

And his eye have changed completely , into when he goes and changes into the golden God

Me : are you okay ?

There's veins popping all over his forehead , he's getting frustrated

I walk closer and try to take Nozi from him , but she refuses and lays her head on his chest

And she smiles , taking her thumb into her mouth

Me : you Oceans people are freaks

He blinks quite a few times and shakes his head , and he looks like he's back to himself

Me : everything okay ?



Tyler : find me a powerful seer , if you know one . We need to get back as soon as possible

A seer ? Why would he want to see a seer ?

Me : we're leaving tomorrow

Tyler : tonight

And he's not kidding , he gets to and walks out . I'm left shocked

.

.

\*INSERT 50\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I may sound crazy right now , but the way my father just left is very much worrying

He just came in here last night , dropped  
Nozi off said goodbye to Londi

And told Bia that he will see her soon ,  
when she's back home

And that was it , he didn't even say  
anything to me like nothing at all

Now I'm really just wondering , what  
was that all about ?

And why leave middle of the night like  
that , as if they're running away from  
something ?

I tried calling my mother , but it was  
pointless

Now I know in an hour or two , they'll be  
back in South Africa

Maybe I can call her , and she can tell me  
what's going on . That's if she knows

But she would never allow to be dragged  
across the world , middle of the night  
like that

Without a valid reason or knowing why ,  
that much I already know

My phone rings , and it's JJ . Haven't spoken to him in a while now

I answer , because in all honesty I miss my cousin

Me : junior

JJ : uzonya (you'll shit yourself)

I laugh , but that's his name

JJ : heard negotiations went well ?

Me : who told you that ?

JJ : aunt called her uncle , and the old  
just can't help himself

I laugh , uncle Jayden is something else

Me : you should have been here

He sighs

Me : despite the shit , of what I do and  
you disapproving . You should have been  
here , not only are you my cousin man .  
You're my best friend

JJ : I know , and I am sorry . I fucked up  
big time

We're guys , unlike women I don't think  
we should be dwelling on such things

We still need to have each other , and on  
this one I am really not at fault

My mother called oNgwenya and let  
them know , I also texted him cause calls  
yeah . He was just being dramatic

He ignored me and missed the  
opportunity to come along with

Me : now you didn't even get to see my kids

JJ : and I miss the chap like crazy

I chuckle

Me : he's strange now , as his mother says

JJ : you and Bia are going to drive those kids crazy



Me : fuck off , I'm coming back today . I have to come down , and see how we can go down about the throne issue

JJ : you're ready for that ?

Me : more than ready

I will not be an outcast like my father , those two had their way and now it's time an Oceans has his way as well

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Bianca\*

TJ was very much worrying , and I didn't even want him to leave

The babies and I will be going back in a week , I don't know why such a hurry .  
But he will be crowned king then , from his own words

And obviously , as his family we have to be there

He was just worrying , he wasn't himself today . He was up from 03:00 in the morning

And only got some sleepy around 05:00 , and around 08:00 he was already ready to leave

Maybe it's because of how his parents left , and that has him worried . I'm back at the palace , he didn't leave us at the hotel

Mom : what's wrong ?

Me : did father say anything to the  
Oceans ?

I just have to ask , because Mr Oceans  
didn't sound nor look like himself when  
he brought Nozi back last night

And it's just how middle of the night ,  
they just left like that

Mom : something like what ?

Me : anything that would maybe upset him or make him leave like in an instant?

If her husband is guilty she will know , because I know he will not have any problem

Boasting to her , about what he did . So if he did something , she knows

Mom : not as far as I know , no . And Tyler spoke with your father before he left . And it didn't look nor sound like he's leaving because of any of us

Me : oh !

Now that's new and slightly alarming

Me : about what ?

Mom : just general things , I think every father would be saying for the sake of their kids . He just asked him to keep you and the babies safe , until you go back to South Africa

Okay nothing shady about that , I mean that's expected right ?

Maybe I'm just worried about nothing ,  
maybe something else made them go  
back home

My daughter wasn't happy through , she  
woke up and the way she was busy  
looking around

You could tell she noticed her men's  
were not here , she was grumpy

Until my father took her , and she's fine  
now still with him

.

.

\*Camps Bay CPT\*

Ledi is no happy with her husband ,  
being dragged half way across the world

Middle of the night , like they're witches.  
She's not happy and Tyler can see it



He didn't say much to her , or even Sambulo . Who has been looking for a seer . As per Tyler's request , they've just arrived now . And they're all tired

You can just see the fatigue on their faces , but the worry and concern on a father

Is what's more important to him right now , more than anything else

Ledi : I'm going to sleep , don't be making any noise

Even her tone , is not pleased at all .  
Everyone had to come back

Even the uncle's that went there with  
them , but leaving the airport

They slept at the hotel , along with  
Africa. He felt it won't be nice he comes  
home , and they stay at the hotel alone

Tyler : don't go please

He's begging , and that gets to her

Sambulo : I'll go call Lizzy

He just wants to give the two some space

Tyler : I need to talk to both of you

Them : why ?

The siblings sigh after asking him that

Tyler : please sit down ?

They all sit down

Tyler : TJ wasn't laying , when he said  
Nozi showed him everything about  
Princess

Sambulo : wait that's what she was  
doing with you too ?

He nods , and Ledi is a bit lost

Sambulo : that baby's touch us  
dangerous

TJ : Princess is dead , and soon Prince  
will follow

Jaws drop

Ledi : what...what do you mean ?

Tyler : she showed me that , and it's her father's hand this will be done

Ledi : my son ?

She's on her feet

Tyler : I think you need to calm down

Instead of calming down , she breaks down

Ledi : but TJ is not a killer , Tyler no !

Sambulo comforts her , and the sad thing is realising just how serious Tyler is

Meaning he's not lying , he's telling the truth . But as a mother , how do you accept such about your own child ?

Tyler : my father is gifted , TJ is about to be crowned King to the Manzini kingdom. If this is exposed he will be beheaded , he killed royalty with his own hand . Princess may find a way now , to connect to my father and tell him all this. Nozi wants all that stopped , she

wants her father protected . He killed  
yes , but he was doing it to protect them

....

You cannot miss the breaking of his  
voice , and tears escapes his own eyes

Tyler : they are my siblings , I love them .  
But I love my son more , and I have to  
protect him

Ledi moves from Sambulo , she crouches  
down in front of him

Tyler : he was just protecting his kids ,  
any father would do anything to do that

She lifts his head , and wipes his tears off  
and pecks his lips

Ledi : it's okay , it's okay I understand

She says all this nodding , cupping his  
face . Avoiding her own tears

She sees just how broken her husband is  
right now , and the conflict battle inside  
of himself . Those two were his siblings ,  
no matter how things can be looked at



But clearly , Nozi asked him to protect her father . And that's what he will be doing , for the sake of his granddaughter

That asked help from him

Ledi : did she....uhm did she show you how we can help him ?

She cannot believe she's asking a grown up man , what a month's old baby said

It doesn't even make sense , this is insane . She had a different child from the rest

But as a baby he was a baby , and was not doing any strange things like their granddaughter is

Tyler : I will just have to kill and spill blood

Ledi : Tyler !

Sambulo is confused now , because he spoke about a seer to him

Sambulo : I thought you said I should find a seer , and I may have found one

Tyler : where ?

Sambulo : a village near to Manzini

He goes quite , like he's thinking long and hard

Ledi : would you just tell us ?

Tyler : either I find the seer and they block any path , that can possibly make my father know this truth . Or I kill a royal blood and make a sacrifice

Ledi : no !

She can already see he's made up his mind

Tyler : he can be blocked , but for how long ? Forces will be at warn, eventually they will get through to him . As spirit , they won't be useless anymore . And it's vicious souls , that will be seeking revenge and to avenge themselves . TJ is not safe , he can fight a physical fight . But spiritually he cannot fight , remember we're not gifted like them . We're actually cursed than we're gifted , and that alone gives them an advantage. My father cannot find out what my son has done , and who knows how many

years he's still going to live ? Blocking him is too risky

Ledi : you said you'll have to kill a royal blood and make a sacrifice

She swallows hard saying this , her arms are even shaking she cannot believe she's about to ask him this

Ledi : who ?

And she stares right into his eyes , searching for that answer . Before he can even say it to her

\*INSERT 51\*

\*Tyler Jnr\*

My parents are not themselves ,  
something is definitely a miss here

And I just got back home , but I can feel  
the tension in this house

I wonder what's wrong , because doesn't  
seem like anyone wants to say anything

I tried talking to my mother , she just  
wasn't having any of it

And I won't dare try my father , uncle  
Sambulo came in this morning

And soon after left with him , they have  
been gone for a while now

Just finished my call with Bia and my kids, and now I just want to go and see Prince

Best I just finish him off , because I think I'll head down to KZN tomorrow

Maybe the village aura will do me some good , before I'm crowned king on weekend

Ntsika isn't having jobs for me right now, so I'm not even worried about leaving. I get into my car and drive out to the dungeon , and to my surprise I find my father and uncle Sambulo



I'm shocked even beyond the word shock , like how are they here ? And how did they even know about this place ? Like a lot doesn't make sense right now

Me : what...what are you doing here ?

Dad : could be asking you the same thing

I rub my hands together , I don't know what's this

I don't even know how to explain it , I'm even scared right now

My father might just beat the hell out of me , and if he knows about this . I feel like he knows about Princess as well , this could mean shit for me.

And Prince is on the floor , he looks dead. Laying in a pool of his blood , he seems to have bled from his wrist

Sambulo : when did you become this person ?

Sambulo is like a father of some kind to me , there's no way I'm going to talk shit to him

Dad : you killed your aunt ?

Me : I didn't

I did not , I just gave an order for her to be killed . I didn't personally kill her

Dad : let's go

He's kidding , and I guess not as they both get up

Me : dad what happened to him ?

Dad : I killed him

And just like that they walk out , now I  
don't get any of this

I walk closer to him , and hold his write .  
His veins have been popped opened

.

.

.

.

\*Sambulo\*

I will never get used to these Oceans  
killing people , they just do it in the most  
terrifying ways ever

Like how that that boy captured his own  
uncle , and had him tortured like that

It was just bloody insane , and Tyler just  
finished him . Popping his veins , and  
drinking his own brother's blood

These people are sick alright , just the  
extent he went to saving his son's life .  
He ditched the seer situation , and opted  
for sacrificing his own brother

I never saw that one coming , he took a whole different turn of the whole thing

Ledi : and ?

She's been so anxious , and that's the first thing she asks us as we arrive at their house

Tyler : it's done

She just engulfs him into a hug , and he returns it

Ledi : I'm so sorry

Tyler : we did it for him , he's our son

And they will go to hell and back for him

Ledi : thank you so much , I will never forget this Oceans

She's so emotional right now , I walk away from them and make a call to Lizzy

They need the moment alone , and just digest everything that happened

Lizzy : baby

Me : my love , are you guys okay ?

Lizzy : yes we're okay , when are you coming back ?

Me : in an hour or so , I'm at the Oceans

Lizzy : okay , we want to go out

I chuckle

Me : okay , I'll be home soon . Get ready in the meantime

Lizzy : I love you



Me : and I love you

I'm so fucking content with this woman ,  
I don't see this life thing without her

She's been one hella blessing , to me and  
my kids

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I have been so sceptical coming home ,  
after what happened earlier on

I don't know what awaits me , I got rid of  
Prince's body

And made sure , there's no existence or  
any trace of it

Dad : come here

He's the first one I get to see walking  
through the door

I follow him hesitating

Me : where is mom ?

She better know he's the one who killed me

Dad : you kill people left right and centre, and you still cry for your mother

Me : she....are you going to kill me ?

I didn't even kill either of those people , isn't he the one who killed his brother ?

I think he is , even though I'm not sure about that

There's no way Prince hurt himself like that , it was just a messy suicide situation

Dad : I would go to the lengths of killing my brother to save you , from my father and then only to kill you myself ?

See , he just confirmed it

Me : wait , what do you mean to save me from your father ?

Can it be that he knows what I did to his

kids ? Fuck if that's the case I am dead ,  
he's not going to spare my life for this

Me : does he know ?

Dad : I sacrificed Prince to block them  
from ever reaching him , Princess was  
just going to be a problem . And thank  
your daughter for this , even though it  
meant drinking my own brother's blood

Shit , I cannot believe that my own  
daughter is going to grow up knowing  
the kind of man her father is

.

\*INSERT 52\*

\*Camps Bay CPT\*

Tyler has been in their bedroom all morning , he just cannot bring himself to face reality

His father has been calling him , all day  
and he's been ignoring his calls

He feels so guilty , and just doesn't even  
know what he'll say to him

Ledi : baby

He's sitting on the bed , his face hidden  
by his face

Ledi : you can't keep doing this to  
yourself

She sits down next to him , and place her one hand on his back

Ledi : I know this is hard on you , and I know you can't just live like everything is fine . You were conflicted , backed into a corner . Either your son , and or having your father having his way with my son . Those were his kids , and like any parent he was going to react . He wouldn't have understood , the same way you reacted saving our son . I'm not condoning what TJ did , and infact it infuriates me . Knowing the kind of child I've given birth to and raised , my son a whole murderer



Tyler : he didn't kill either of them ?

Ledi : isn't Princess dead because he wanted her dead , and Prince ? Wasn't he going to kill him ?

Tyler : still he didn't kill either of them

This leaves Ledi confused , the way he's protecting TJ right now . She doesn't get it

Because clearly this is eating him up , maybe it's not about TJ but himself

Either way , she kisses the side of his face and walks away

.

.

.

.

\*Tuscan Kingdom\*

The king and queen are with the babies , the twins and the young prince as well as their grandchildren

The king doesn't seem to be in his right mind , and the queen slightly has an idea why

It's because Bianca and the kids will be leaving for South Africa tomorrow

And he doesn't really approve of his daughter , going to live across the world

Queen Mbali : she's someone wife , and wether you like it or not . She's soon to be a Oceans

He sighs

King Ciri : she better keep her surname  
as a first , and take that Oceans as a  
second

The queen laughs

Queen Mbali : you're being dramatic

He shakes his head

Queen Mbali : I love this

He looks at her

Queen Mbali : just look at Paris , she's a spitting image of Africa

And he takes a closer look at her , and the queen is right

King Ciro : she's just a betrayal , and I look way much better than him .

She laughs

Queen Mbali : what are you trying to say about your granddaughter ?

King Ciro : she's one beautiful baby

He says with a smile , and Nozi laughs out of nowhere . Just making everyone look at her

She's so bubbly , in her presence you just can't help but engage yourself in her energy

King Ciro : I still don't get why you're loving this

Queen Mbali : these kids have brought this family together , and now you and the Oceans have to bury the hatchet . We're family now , we can't deny that .

And there's more babies coming after these ones

She says getting up , seeing how annoyed he's getting

But truth of the matter remains , and they all have to make peace with it now

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

It's a sad moment right now , even my kids are sulking

It's like they know they're leaving now , and they don't like it

This has become home to them now , and now we have to adjust in KZN

And I really hope this is the last move , I can't keep uprooting my kids like this

Mom : take care of yourself

Me : always



We hug , and my father is done  
strapping the babies

My brother's didn't even want to say  
goodbye , I don't blame them

They understand what leaving home  
means now , and they know it's just like  
last time

Dad : we will be there , to support you  
when your husband is crowned king

He says giving me a hug , and his words  
leave me emotional

Like I never thought , that even one day  
my father can say such

And the fact that in two days , they'll be  
coming . Just to be with us , on TJ's big  
day

It makes me so happy , like isn't this the  
ending the two families need ?

After years and years of hate towards  
each other

Me : thank you so much

We say goodbye , and they leave .  
Before I board the plane , I call TJ . It's a  
long flight , and I just want to hear his  
voice

TJ : my girl

Me : papi

TJ : tell me you're coming

I laugh

Me : yes

TJ : I can't wait to see you

Me : I know , I also can't wait to see you

TJ : where are my kids ?

Me : asleep , they were sulking like crazy

TJ : they'll be happy as soon as they see me

Me : I know , let's talk when I arrive

TJ : I love you , and I love them too

I smile , laughing slightly

Me : I love you too , and can't they just speak for themselves ?

He laughs

TJ : stop being jealous

Me : goodbye

TJ : I love you

Twice in just few minutes apart , it's amazing to be loved

\*Tyler Jnr\*

I should be in KZN by now , but I don't know anymore if that's wise or what

I'm scared , the way my father has been lately . I don't know what's wrong . I know everything about what I did is

wrong , and now he's caught up in the middle

And I hate it , I hate every single bit of it .  
I wish he wasn't involved

But he is , and it's too late now . There's nothing I can do to change the situation

Maybe seeing my woman and kids will ease my pain and anxiety right now

That's the one good thing , that will be happening soon . Seeing them in the midst of these troubles of mine

A call from my grandfather unsettles me,  
I look at the phone ringing for quite a  
while

I clear my throat and answer , not saying  
anything and he's also quote

Me : baba (Grandfather)

Baba : before the end of today , I want  
you here

Something is a miss with his tone , he  
doesn't sound like his usual self



Baba : don't make me call you again ,  
come alone

He drops the call , and my heart sinks to  
the pit of my stomach

What if he knows ? Fuck I'm dead ,  
there's no way I'm coming back there  
alive

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*INSERT 53\*

\*Bianca\*

I'm so not happy with TJ , like I wouldn't mind going back home right now

He sounded all so happy , to be seeing me and the kids

We arrive , he's nowhere to be found at the airport

He's nowhere to be found on the phone,  
I can't reach him anywhere

I'm so mad right now , I'm literally  
fuming . I'm crying , and I want to go  
back home

This is nonsense , and I can't believe I  
came here for this nonsense

Mrs Manzini : are they asleep ?

Me : yes

She can see that I am not okay at all ,  
even she doesn't know where his son is  
at

Me : I called my father , we'll probably  
be going back home soon

Mrs Manzini : Bianca , that's a bit drastic

Me : is it ? Your son clearly doesn't know  
what's priority in his life . Or maybe he  
knows , it's just not me and the kids . I've  
been calling him since last night , and  
this morning . His phone rings , and he's  
just ignoring me . I know he's fine

wherever he is , my kids and I don't need  
to be here

I take the ring off and walk to the  
bedroom , I might look like I'm  
overreacting but I am not

If something of emergency came up ,  
why didn't he just call to let me know

Or text even , if there's no time to call .  
All I'm asking for , was not to be made a  
fool

I had to call his mother , stuck at the airport . Waiting on him to come and fetch us

I waited straight up for two hours , before calling his mother . At the realisation that he wasn't coming

Good thing my bags are still packed , I can't do this nonsense anymore

Until he knows we're just as important as he is , because we came all this way to support him

But clearly he doesn't care about that

That's why I called my father and told him , we're coming back home

.

.

.

.

\*Camps Bay CPT\*

Ledi has just told Tyler , that Bianca is set to take the babies and go back to Italy

Also that she took her ring off , and seems to be done with TJ . It was yesterday when he went MIA , and they have no idea where he is

He didn't come back home , he didn't say where he was going or when he was going to come back

His parents are very much worried about him , and now seems like they have more reason to be worried



Tyler : it's only been a few days , when we went there and paid bride price for his wife . And now he does this ?

Ledi : where is he ?

He shakes his head , he has called almost everyone he can think of

And no one seems to know where TJ is at , since midday yesterday no one can tell exactly where he went

Ledi : this is not good at all

Tyler : maybe it's what he needs , right after I clear up his mess and he goes and does this ?

He gets up

Tyler : I'm done , he can see himself out . If Bianca is taking the kids and is leaving , then let her . Don't keep that poor girl here , when clearly your son doesn't care

He walks out , Ledi wipes her tears off . She doesn't know if it's what Tyler just said

Or it's the whole situation , the possibility that something could be wrong with her son

Or the fact that his marriage is failing before it can even begin , this is not how things were supposed to turn out

- 
- 
- 
- 

\*Tuscan Kingdom\*

The queen is tired , trying to get the king to calm down

But he's not hearing any of it , and he's ready to head to South Africa and fetch his daughter

The queen thinks the idea is not so good, especially because she thinks Bianca may be overreacting

King Ciriaco : why did he let her go all the way there ?

He's pacing around

Waiting for the pilot to alert him that the jet is ready

King Ciro : there was no need for all this hurt my daughter is feeling right now . He should have told her not to come

Queen Mbali : maybe something....

King Ciro : I don't care , I'm going there and getting my kids . The next time I see that boy he's dead

He walks out

The queen is left in disbelief . She takes her phone and calls Ledi

After a few rings she answers , with a heavy heart as well

Ledi : my queen

It's even accompanied by a sigh

Queen Mbali : it's bad

Ledi : I know

Queen Mbali : I think Mr and you both know just how much our kids love each other . Bianca is just hurt , she's acting impulsive and she's not thinking straight.

Ledi : Tyler has walked out on my son

The queen sighs shaking her head , now this is not good at all

Queen Mbali : my husband will be coming to fetch her , and I say it's not good for our husbands to even come anywhere near each other right now

Ledi : there's only one of me , there's only so much I can do

Queen Mbali : I can't come there , my boy is still young . I can't leave him and his brother's with the nanny , he's still grumpy and used to having me with him all the time

Ledi : what do I do ?

Queen Mbali : find your son , and do it fast . I know it's crazy , but the only way we can save this relationship is if he's found



The bad network cuts their call , and she wonders if Ledi even heard her

What a mess of things , how do they even fix this one ? Is it even fixable

- .
- .
- .
- .

\*Bianca\*

I didn't sleep a wink , we were supposed to be going to KZN today

But I don't see myself going there , I'm just anxiously waiting for my father

He will be here in an hour or two , Mrs Manzini is not happy with me

She's not even hiding it , and now I feel so bad . But I cried myself to sleep

Wondering if he didn't ditch me now , for a better woman

I can't put anything past TJ , and clearly I keep learning the hard way

Mr Oceans walks in , and he looks like he's given up on life

Me : my father will be here soon

Mrs Manzini : you're going to deprive us of spending time with our grandchildren?

She must not , without TJ what am I doing here? This is his home , these are his people

They're not mine , I know them because of him but this is not what I had in mind

Mr Oceans : what did I say to you ?

Ledi : you might have given up on him , but that boy is my answer. To the pain and suffering of years . And he's done exactly that , he has become that answered prayer . I look at his daughter and I see the answers to my prayers , unlike us he can have many more babies and grow the Oceans family name . So forgive me for being selfish right now , and just allow me to be a mother to my son

Okay , I've never seen her like this

Tyler : haven't I done enough ? What I just did for him, wasn't it enough ? Now what the hell am I supposed to do ?.

She moves her eyes around like she's thinking

Me : what....what is it ? Where is she ?

I get on my feet , my voice is raised a bit. They'll forgive me , but I feel like she knows something

Me : where is he ?

And no one is bothering to answer me ,  
instead she takes car keys and runs out

.

.

.

.

\*INSERT 54\*

\*Sambulo\*

My sister called me crying , and sounding very bad

I had to rush and attend to her , and she was on her way to the airport

Telling me she's going to KZN , believing that Africa has TJ

And in her state , I just couldn't let her go there all alone

Right there I decided to go along with her , I'm just so grateful for Lizzy

The way she's so understanding , but I know that I can't always put her in such situations

She's my woman , and I can't always ditch her whenever a situation arises

But it's always hard , where my sister is concerned .

Me : are you sure about this?

She nods , I'm driving through KZN now heading to the palace



And she looks like a mess , I'm sure she's  
even feeling I'm driving slow

Me : maybe we should call Tyler

Ledi : he's angry right now , he won't  
bother

Me : I'm a father myself and....

Ledi : and you're not Tyler , nothing is  
going to soften his heart

I don't approve of this , and I don't agree  
with it at all

\*Bianca\*

I'm in an awkward position right now , in  
between my father and Mr Oceans

The tension in the room , is just too  
much . Not to mention the silence . And I  
hate just how anxious , I am feeling right  
now

I wish I knew where Mrs Manzini went to , I wish I knew that TJ was okay

I was here thinking he's cheating maybe, but now I am really worried

What if something has happened to him? I can't even stand that thought alone

I take my ring and put it on , his father smiles and mine shakes his head

But I don't care about them right now

Me : do you think he's safe ?

I don't know how I'm asking , but  
whoever answers me it's fine

Mr Oceans : if he's half my son , then  
he's fine

What the hell does that even mean ?

Dad : I swear you Oceans people are  
gong to drive my daughter crazy . That  
boy of yours should have played far  
away from her , but no he wanted to be

a man . And now he's one , what does he do ? He runs away , like a coward

Mr Oceans : don't fucking insult him like that

Dad : what will you do ? You better pray he comes back , and speak for himself . Or else he will explain on the other said

They both get up , I look at them and I can't believe this

These two grown me are about to tear each other in front of me

Me : stop

No one pays attention to me.

Me : both of you , can you just stop .  
You're really acting more stupid than TJ  
himself right now

It's when they look at me , I retrace my  
words back and I just said they're stupid

I walk out with my tail between my legs ,  
it'll be a while before I see any of them  
again

Okay , we're back to square one . And I  
take back any good word ice ever said  
about the good relationship now

.

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

Coming here was a mistake I keep that ,  
sure he doesn't know anything

Seems like the ritual worked , he's really blocked . But I think he's gone crazy , and has lost his mind

Not him challenging me , and my worst fear of hurting him has come to pass

Me : told you I don't wanna do this

He looks almost out of it , but his inner beast is still fighting me

I have a broken arm , he wasn't having any mercy on me . He wasn't holding back



Minutes arriving at the palace , he brings me here . And since the day before yesterday we have been in here

Baba : I told you , no weakling of a man will sit on my throne

Yes this is what he calls what he's doing , making us fight each other like this

Because he wants a fucking hard-core king for the throne

And if this is the sheet it takes , then I don't fucking want that throne

I said those words to him , and that's  
what got me a broken arm

Baba : your father once brought Prince  
here , in hopes that he will unleash him .  
And he will become a man , but it  
deemed to be useless . 18 years later ,he  
still fucking failed to be a man and rule  
this Kingdom . You keep holding back ,  
because you think I can't take you on .  
You're just a stronger pathetic version of  
Prince

He's trying to provoke me , he keeps  
throwing insults my way every chance he  
gets

He saw how I went at Prince , when he insulted me

Me : baba (grandfather)

I'm sitting down , and he's turning his back against a tree

Me : there's no need for this , if you feel I'm weak . Then find another person to take over , your kingdom . If I'm not fit enough for it , then fucking keep it

He turns and looks at me , his eyes look like they're fuming . I move back , before

he even approaches me

.

.

.

.

**\*Sambulo\***

We got to the palace , and was shocked to hear that Africa and Tyler haven't been around for the past two days

Now that's very much worrying , and we  
Ledi just told us to run to the woods

I can't believe this , but yeah we did and  
now here we are

And this place is creepy , anything can  
come out of these trees and it'll be the  
end of us

Me : we should really go back

Ledi : not before I find my son

Me : what if he's not even here

Ledi : he is

She shouts and I keep quite , but I really  
want to go back

This place just reminds me , of seeing  
Tyler beating his brother senseless

It's when we hear a thud and a groan ,  
we look at each other

Ledi : this way

We run as fast as we can , until we stop  
of our tracks seeing them

And they look like shit , I realise that TJ is hurt . Ledi just runs towards him

And the danger I see , it's Africa coming for TJ and Ledi is not even aware of it

He comes so fast , I fear for my sister's life more than anything

I will never understand this crazy family , they're just obsessed with hurting each other

Me : Ledi.....

I call her out , before she even turns TJ  
sees Africa and he pushes his mother out  
of the way

He throws Africa up , and when he  
comes back to land he lands on a tree  
branch

I goes through his stomach , and Ledi  
screams her lungs out

TJ takes one look at his grandfather , and  
turns to his mother . He engulfs her into  
a hug , she's wailing so painfully it's  
heart-breaking



I can't even look at Africa , he's not even far from either of us

This is just messed up , and I don't understand why did they even come here and fight each other for days

These people are just sick , and I hope this nonsense ends here . We can't have such things from Londi as well

I walk to my TJ and his mother

TJ : I killed him

Tears are screaming down his face , and  
now a silent cry is even more painful  
than a loud one

Ledi : Tyler is going to kill my son this  
time around , he cannot know . Sambulo  
TJ has to get away from here please ,  
Tyler will kill him

Her cry breaks me

TJ : it's okay , please tell my kids I love  
them

Ledi pulls out of the hug , and I realise that his arm is broken

Ledi : Sambulo , get my son away from here

Now that's a command

Ledi : I don't even have to know where he is

TJ : Mon stop !

This is havoc , I reach for my pocket and

take out the ring . I'm right behind him ,  
and he doesn't see me

I place my hand behind his neck ,  
injecting him with the poison from the  
ring

He turns and throws one fucking mean  
punch at me , I bleed through my jaw

Me : fuck

And he's done , his mother breaks the  
fall so he doesn't hurt himself

Ledi : this is for your own good , I love you so much

He kisses his forehead , and looks at Africa's lifeless body

Ledi : get him away

Me : what about him ?

Ledi : Tyler needs to bury his father

I don't approve of this , he might just turn against my sister

Ledi : I'll rather he kills me and not my son

With that being said she walks past me , and I pick up TJ walking with him to my car

.

.

.

.

\*Bianca\*

Mrs Manzini came back today , but she was a mess

And certainly not herself , and now I am really worried

I can't help but worry , like where is TJ and where did she rush off to yesterday?

And clearly whatever happened , didn't give her what she wanted

My father is staying at the hotel , and I'm still here with my kids

And as for Mr Oceans , I don't even see him much . Which is fine by me

Mrs Manzini walks in and she's bathed now , but she looks like she's carrying the whole world on her shoulders

Me : ma , where is TJ ?

She sits down

Mrs Manzini : I need you to go back home



What now ? Wasn't she against this a few days ago

Me : you're telling me to leave ?

Mrs Manzini : TJ is not here baby , take the kids and go home .

I can't believe this , I really can't

Me : wow , fine I'll leave . It's not like I was kicked away from him , I guess your son was just never for me

I get up , and she's wiping her tears . And they look so genuine , but I don't know what to believe anymore with these people

I leave her there and walk to the bedroom , I'm taking my kids and we're leaving

I call my father , so he can come and get us

- 
- 
- 
-

## \*Tuscan Kingdom\*

The queen receives a call from Ledi , and she takes it

Knowing just how bad and tense the situation is back in South Africa . And there's kids invoked in all of that , which is what she hates

Bianca and TJ are not kids , and they said they want this

So she's not getting involved much into their issue , because she has that belief that one day they'll be fine

The parents shouldn't be involving themselves in this matter , it has nothing to do with them

Queen Mbali : what's wrong ?

Ledi : can I trust you ?.

She can hear the strain on Ledi's voice

Queen Mbali : you can trust me

She says meaning that , this woman once came through for her . And if this is her time to come through for her , she's even willing to do it

Ledi : no one can know this , a terrible mistake has happened . TJ killed his grandfather ...

The queen gasps not believing what she's hearing

Ledi : there's just been too many deaths surrounding him , with his fathers family. Tyler has forgiven him , but this time he will not . I was there , I saw it . It was just a mistake , he didn't mean to kill him with intent . But I know my husband , this is his father . My son won't survive his wrath

The queens heart breaks and goes out to Ledi , hearing the tone of her voice

Queen Mbali : what can I do for you ?.

Ledi : my brother has taken him into hiding , his grandfather also beat him up

so bad . My son loves Bianca and his kids more than anything in this world , and if he never sees them again . He won't make it , I've sent Bianca to come back home . As soon as TJ gets well , I'll ask my brother to take his family to him . Even I don't know where he is , I ask that you make a plan to make sure that they get to go and see him . For now , I want him to get better . And please just be there for Bianca , she's going to need you

A little silence

Queen Mbali : stay strong

Ledi : I'll remember this one

Queen Mbali : you once did me one

They both hang up , and the queen sits  
down defeated

.

.

.

.

\*Camps Bay CPT\*



Tyler walks in , and since his wife arrived in the morning

He has seen that she isn't okay , but she didn't want to talk and he just let her

Ledi : can we talk ?

He looks at her , like now she wants to talk . He says nothing back , and doesn't bother sitting down

Ledi : I don't know who instilled this sick mentality in the minds of the Oceans men , maybe it's the curse you all suffer

from . Your father summons my son to KZN , only to repeat a Prince and you situation with him . For three days he's in the woods , fighting my son . Hoping to achieve a king that's not a weakling , by beating the shit out of my son . Breaking him , and having his way with him . And in the end he died , at the hands of my son . And now he's to take blame that he killed your father ?

Tyler looks at her intensely , not believing what he's hearing . But then again he knows his wife , she would never lie not even joke about such a thing

Ledi : he ran away , and I don't even know where he is . Your father is taken to the palace , I'm sure they'll be calling you son . Informing you of his passing

She gets off the bed

Ledi : I don't blame him this time around, he was provoked . Africa could have tested him in another way , but he chose his one . It was an honest mistake that in the course of it , he lost his life . If you feel like you want to avenge him , then here I am . Kill me and not my son , that's my answered prayer to my tears prayers

Tyler looks at her one last time and he walks out , the second he's out the door she gets on her knees and wails breaking down

- .
- .
- .
- .

**\*THREE MONTHS LATER\***

.....  
Tyler stayed a whole two weeks in Manzini kingdom , after the burial of his father . He has chosen to leave the throne as it is , with no one from their bloodline to be taking it . In the whole two weeks there was no communication whatsoever , between him and his wife .

Ledi did not even attend the funeral , she felt like Tyler was done with him . After the two weeks he went back home, and was the husband Ledi has known all her 19 years almost 20 years of marriage to him . The two are still fine, he didn't ask much about TJ nor about what happened

---

Queen Mbali kept to her word to Ledi , she did not say a word to anyone about the matter . Not even to the king , who is still not pleased with TJ to this day . And now seems far , if he'll ever accept TJ as his son in law . Or even accept any relations with the Oceans

.....  
It's been two months now , that Sambulo and Lizzy have found out that they're pregnant . The news found the couple very much so happy , and it seems only to have strengthened their relationship . He plans to propose to Lizzy right after she gives birth , knowing women and their obsession with being beautiful brides . He's happy and content , that he's finally found the one his heart yearns for . After all these years of longing and seeking love . Finally he's found the one , that's sticking around

.....  
Ntsika still in the business of doing what he does best , still in one hell of an estranged relationship with both his parents . Still trying to get Nobuhle , the

woman who seems to have his heart taken. Just taking life as it is and comes , but still worried over his star guy going missing and no one having an idea where he is . The past three months he spent still trying to find where TJ could possibly be

---

\*Bianca\*

My mother has seen feet to take me and the twins away , I'm not even feeling this

But she says we need the time away , my  
kids are breaking my heart

I look at them everyday and see just how  
they've turned to look like their father  
now

And he's abandoned us , without even  
giving a care in the world

I haven't spoken to anyone back in South  
Africa , at his family . I really want  
nothing to do with those people



It beats me why I'm still wearing his ring through ,because it's not like I'm his wife

I really don't regard myself as one , the treatment I have gotten it's just shit

Driver : we are here

He brings me out of my thoughts , and this place looks very suspicious

Me : are you sure this is the right place ?

Driver : yes , you can call the queen to confirm

I am calling her , one can never be too safe . And Nozi is awake , at 7 months

They've mastered saying yes and no , so much that it's annoying

Calling my mother might not be a good idea , if only she was asleep

As I dial her number , I see uncle Sambulo approaching the car and now I'm shocked

.

.

.

\*Tyler Jnr\*

It's been quite a rough months , having to heal after the damage that occurred to my body

No normal human being inflicted that pain , and I guess that's what it too so long for me to be okay

And it's only been a day awake , and the first thing I wanted was my woman and my kids

Knowing what I've done , knowing what my mother did to save my life . I don't know how I'm going to survive this now , I feel like I owe my father so many apologies

But they won't bring anyone he lost because of me back

I wonder how are they back home , it was really nice waking up to a friendly face though

I didn't even ask him anything about my parents , I'm ashamed more than I am anything

Maybe that throne was never meant to be mine to even begin with , and that's why a fight to prove that I'm worthy of it has caused me to kill my own Grandfather

The door opens and it's the none sense making sounds , that brings me to a smile . One look at me and Bia comes to tears , it breaks me . And it takes a whole minute before the two realise me

And when they do , they get off Sambulo  
and crawl to me . Nozi making so much  
noise

I can't help but tear up , I missed all this .  
I wasn't there to see them starting to  
crawl

I wonder what else I picked them ,  
maybe this . Them balancing themselves  
with my feet to stand up

How can I not cry though , seeing all this  
and knowing I didn't get to witness it all  
first hand

I pick them both up , hurting my arm in the process . I flinch and groan I pain slightly

Bia : take it easy

I lift my eyes and look at her

Sambulo : I'll leave you guys alone

He walks out

Me : I'm so sorry I know I failed you , and I failed them I.....

Bia : your kids missed you , please  
forgive yourself . We forgive you

She wipes her tears , and what prayer  
did I pray for this kind of a woman ?

Because there's no way that I've just  
struck gold , nor is it even just luck

A prayer must have been said here , and  
she turned out to be the perfect  
answered prayer

I smile looking at her , and she returns it  
back



.

.

.

.

**\*THE END\***